## INFORMATION TO USERS

This manuscript has been reproduced from the microfilm master. UMI films the text directly from the original or copy submitted. Thus, some thesis and dissertation copies are in typewriter face, while others may be from any type of computer printer.

The quality of this reproduction is dependent upon the quality of the copy submitted. Broken or indistinct print, colored or poor quality illustrations and photographs, print bleedthrough, substandard margins, and improper alignment can adversely affect reproduction.

In the unlikely event that the author did not send UMI a complete manuscript and there are missing pages, these will be noted. Also, if unauthorized copyright material had to be removed, a note will indicate the deletion.

Oversize materials (e.g., maps, drawings, charts) are reproduced by sectioning the original, beginning at the upper left-hand corner and continuing from left to right in equal sections with small overlaps.

ProQuest Information and Learning 300 North Zeeb Road, Ann Arbor, MI 48106-1346 USA 800-521-0600
UMI'

## University of Alberta

# On Sequential Change-Point Detection 

by

## Daniel Serban

A thesis submitted to the Faculty of Graduate Studies and Research in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the clegree of Doctor of Philosophy
in

## Statistics

Department of Mathematical and Statistical Sciences

Edmonton, Alberta

Spring 2005

Library and
Bibliothèque et
0-494-08295-X
Archives Canada
Published Heritage Branch

395 Wellington Street Ottawa ON K1A 0N4 Canada

Archives Canada
Direction du
Patrimoine de l'édition
395, rue Wellington Ottawa ON K1A ON4 Canada

> Your file Votre référence ISBN:
> Our file Notre reterence
> ISBN:

NOTICE:
The author has granted a nonexclusive license allowing Library and Archives Canada to reproduce, publish, archive, preserve, conserve, communicate to the public by telecommunication or on the Internet, loan, distribute and sell theses worldwide, for commercial or noncommercial purposes, in microform, paper, electronic and/or any other formats.

The author retains copyright ownership and moral rights in this thesis. Neither the thesis nor substantial extracts from it may be printed or otherwise reproduced withoul the author's permission.

AVIS:
L'auteur a accordé une licence non exclusive permettant à la Bibliothèque et Archives Canada de reproduire, publier, archiver, sauvegarder, conserver, transmettre au public par télécommunication ou par l'Internet, prêter, distribuer et vendre des thèses partout dans le monde, à des fins commerciales ou autres, sur support microforme, papier, électronique et/ou autres formats.

L'auteur conserve la propriété du droit d'auteur et des droits moraux qui protège cette thèse. Ni la thèse ni des extraits substantiels de celle-ci ne doivent être imprimés ou autrement reproduits sans son autorisation.

In compliance with the Canadian Privacy Act some supporting forms may have been removed from this thesis.

While these forms may be included in the document page count, their removal does not represent any loss of content from the thesis.

To my parents

## Abstract

In this thesis new procedures for sequential testing of composite hypotheses are proposed. The procedures are based on large sample approximations of the efficient score vector.

In the first part of the thesis we consider the problem of change-point detection. Specifically, in Chapter 2, we will develop a new CUSUM-type procedure for sequential detection of a change-point in the clistribution of a sequence of independent observations (not necessarily from the exponential family of distributions). In Chapter 3 the method is extended to the case of autocorrelated observations. In both cases we investigate the asymptotic distribution of the test statistics under the altemative hypothesis of change.

In Chapter 4 we compute the critical values for the tests of Gombay (2002) and show how these procedures can be used in clinical trials for comparison of three or more treatments. In the last part we adapt the CUSUM-test to solve the change-point ANOVA problem.

At the end of each chapter Monte Carlo experiments are conducted in order to evaluate the empirical power of the new procedures and for comparison to other methods.

## Acknowledgements

I would like to express my deepest gratitude to my supervisor, Dr. Edit Gombay, for introducing me to the wonderful world of sequential analysis, and for her immense support and guidance during my graduate study and thesis preparation. Without her help, this thesis would not have come to the light. It has been a great pleasure to work under her supervision.

Special thanks go to Dr. D. Wiens, Dr. B. Schmuland, and Dr. R. Karunamuni for their valuable comments and support. I thank Profs R.J. Kulperger and Dr. M. Zuo for agreeing to be external members on my exam committee and for their careful reading of my thesis. Thank you very much to all my committee members for sacrificing some of their time to accommodate my exam date.

Thanks to the Department of Mathematical and Statistical Sciences for the financial support I received during my stay. Thanks are also due to the support staff members and especially to Dona Guelzow for her unforgettable support.

## Contents

1 Introduction ..... 1
1.1 Review and Problems ..... 1
1.1.1 Sequential testing of composite hypotheses ..... 1
1.1.2 Change-point problems ..... 3
1.2 Overview of the thesis ..... 7
2 A CUSUM-Type Sequential Test ..... 9
2.1 Preliminaries ..... 9
2.2 The CUSUM test ..... 13
2.3 Applications ..... 19
2.3.1 Normally distributed observations ..... 19
2.3.2 The nested random effects model ..... 21
2.4 Simulation Studies ..... 26
2.4.1 The case of normally distributed observations ..... 26
2.4.2 The case of the nested random effects model ..... 29
2.5 Consistency of the test ..... 36
3 Monitoring Parameter Change in AR(p) Models ..... 42
3.1 Preliminaries ..... 42
3.2 Monitoring the mean of an $\operatorname{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ process ..... 51
3.3 Monitoring the variance of an $\mathrm{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ process ..... 54
3.4 Monitoring the coefficients of an $\mathrm{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ process ..... 58
3.4.1 AR(1) process ..... 61
3.4.2 AR(2) process ..... 62
3.5 Simulation Studies ..... 64
3.5.1 The case of AR(1) process ..... 64
3.5.2 The case of $\mathrm{AR}(2)$ process ..... 73
3.6 Consistency of the test statistics ..... 75
4 Sequential ANOVA ..... 82
4.1 Preliminarics ..... 82
4.2 Sequential F-test ..... 83
4.3 Tests based on Rao's statistic ..... 85
4.3.1 Critical values for Test 1 ..... 87
4.3.2 Critical values for Test 2 ..... 88
4.4 Simulation Studies ..... 89
4.4.1 Comparison of three treatments ..... 90
4.4.2 Comparison of four treatments ..... 91
4.5 Sequential change-point ANOVA ..... 94
4.5.1 The case of three groups ..... 95
4.5.2 The case of three groups ..... 97
5 Concluding Remarks ..... 98
Bibliography ..... 101
Appendices ..... 106
A Strong Approximations for AR(p) Models ..... 107
B The Distribution of the Maximum of the Bessel Process ..... 117

## List of Tables

2.1 Test for monitoring the mean $\mu$ of a normally distributed population with $\mu_{0}=0$ and $\sigma=1$, and various $\mu_{A}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) and its standard deviation(SD). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.
2.2 Test for monitoring variance $\sigma^{2}$ of a normally distributed population with $\mu=0$ and $\sigma_{0}=1$, and various $\sigma_{A}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) and standard deviation(SD) of AVST. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$
2.3 Test for monitoring mean $\mu$ of a nested random effect model with $\mu_{0}=0, \sigma=0.2, \sigma_{w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{b}=0.6$, and various $\mu_{A}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=1$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.
2.4 Test for monitoring variance component $\sigma^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma_{0}=0.2, \sigma_{w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{b}=0.6$, and various $\sigma_{A}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=1$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.32
2.5 Test for monitoring variance component $\sigma_{w}^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma=0.2, \sigma_{0 w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{b}=0.6$, and various $\sigma_{A w}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=1$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.
2.6 Test for monitoring variance component $\sigma_{b}^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma=0.2, \sigma_{w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{0 b}=0.6$, and various $\sigma_{A b}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=1$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.
2.7 Test for simultaneously monitoring all variance components $\sigma^{2}$, $\sigma_{w}^{2}$, and $\sigma_{b}^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma_{0}=$ $0.2, \sigma_{0 w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{0 b}=0.6$. Only $\sigma$ is changing. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=3$ and $C(\alpha)=2.632$.
2.8 Test for simultaneously monitoring all variance components $\sigma^{2}$, $\sigma_{w}^{2}$, and $\sigma_{b}^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma_{0}=$ $0.2, \sigma_{0 w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{0 b}=0.6$. Only $\sigma_{w}$ is changing. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=3$ and $C(\alpha)=2.632$.
2.9 Test for simultaneously monitoring all variance components $\sigma^{2}$, $\sigma_{w}^{2}$, and $\sigma_{b}^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma_{0}=$ $0.2, \sigma_{0 w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{0 b}=0.6$. Only $\sigma_{b}$ is changing. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=3$ and $C(\alpha)=2.632$.
2.10 Test for simultaneously monitoring all four parameters of a nested random effects model with $\mu_{0}=0, \sigma_{0}=0.2, \sigma_{0 w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{0 b}=0.6$. Only the mean is changing. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=4$ and $C(\alpha)=2.727$.
3.1 Test for monitoring the mean of an $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ model $Y_{i}-\mu_{0}=$ $\phi\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{0}\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\sigma^{2}=1$ and the in-control mean is $\mu_{0}=0$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$.
3.2 Test for monitoring $\sigma$ of an $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ model $Y_{i}-\mu=\phi\left(Y_{i-1}-\right.$ $\mu)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\mu=0$ and the in-control value is $\sigma_{0}=1$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$.
3.3 Test for monitoring the coefficient $\phi_{0}$ of the AR(1) model $Y_{i}-$ $\mu=\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\phi_{0}=0.1, \mu=0, \sigma^{2}=1$ and various $\phi_{\mathrm{A}}$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$ and $C(\alpha)=2.24$ 71
3.4 Test for monitoring the coefficient $\phi_{0}$ of the $\operatorname{AR(1)~model~} Y_{i}-$ $\mu=\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\phi_{0}=-0.5, \mu=0, \sigma^{2}=1$ and various $\phi_{A}$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$ and $C(\alpha)=2.24 . .$.72
3.5 Test for monitoring the coefficient $\phi_{0}$ of the $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ model $Y_{i}-$ $\mu=\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\phi_{0}=0.5, \mu=0, \sigma^{2}=1$ and various $\phi_{A}$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$ and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.73
3.6 Monitoring the coefficients $\phi_{1}$ and $\phi_{2}$ of the $\operatorname{AR}(2)$ model $Y_{i}-$ $\mu=\phi_{1}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\phi_{2}\left(Y_{i-2}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The in-control parameters are $\phi_{10}=-0.1$ and $\phi_{20}=0.1$. Only $\phi_{10}$ is changing to $\phi_{1 A}$
4.1 Critical value $C_{1}(\alpha, d)$ for different values of $d$ and different levels of significance $\alpha$.89
4.2 Critical value $C_{2}^{\prime}\left(\alpha, d, n_{0}\right)$ obtained using Vostrikova's formulae (4.14), for $\alpha=0.05$ and different values of $d$ and $n_{0}$ used in later simulations.
4.3 Comparison of three treatments. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) for Test 1, Test 2, and Sequential F-test with normally distributed outcomes for various $\delta$. Level of significance $\alpha=0.05$.
4.4 Comparison of four treatments. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) for Test 1, Test 2 and Sequential F-test, with normally distributed outcomes for varions $\delta$ and $n_{0}$. Level of significance $\alpha=0.05$.93
4.5 Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) for the CUSUM test with normally distributed outcomes. $\sigma^{2}=1$, $\mu_{2}=\mu_{3}=0$ and for various $\mu_{1}^{(A)}$. Level of significance $\alpha=0.05 . \quad 96$
4.6 Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) for the CUSUM test with normally distributed outcomes. $\sigma^{2}=1$, $\mu_{2}=\mu_{3}=\mu_{1}=0$ and for various $\mu_{1}^{(A)}$. Level of significance $\alpha=0.05$. ..... 96
B. 1 Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq 1 \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=2$. ..... 118
B. 2 Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=3$. ..... 119
B. 3 Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq 1 \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=4$. ..... 120
B. 4 Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=5$ ..... 121
B. 5 Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=6$ ..... 122
B. 6 Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=7$. ..... 123
B. 7 Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=8$ ..... 124

## List of Figures

3.1 Power vs Coefficient when testing change in the mean of an AR(1) model. The truncation point is $n_{0}=200$ and the change point is $\tau=100$. The in-control value is $\mu_{0}$ and the drift, after the change is $m=\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}$.67
3.2 Power when testing for change in the coefficient for different $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ models $(b=\phi)$. The truncation point is $n_{0}=200$ and the change point is $\tau=100$. The initial coefficient value is -0.9 , $-0.5,0,0.5,0.9$. ..... 67

Conventions and notations:
The following notations will be used

| Symbol | Meaning |
| :---: | :---: |
| $x_{t}=o(\phi(t)) a . s$. | $\limsup _{t \rightarrow \infty}\left\|\frac{x^{r}}{\phi(t)}\right\|=0$ almost surely |
| $x_{t} \stackrel{\text { a.s. }}{=} O(\phi(t))$ or $x_{t}=O(\phi(t))$ a.s. | $\underset{t-\infty}{\limsup }\left\|\frac{x_{t}}{\phi(t)}\right\|$ is almost surely finite |
| $x_{t}=O_{p}(\phi(t))$ | $\frac{x_{i}}{\phi(t)}$ is bounded in probability |
| $\xrightarrow{\text { as. }}$ | Almost sure convergence |
| $\xrightarrow{\text { D }}$ | Convergence in distribution |
| D | Equality of finite dimensional distributions |
| LIL | Law of Iterated Logarithm |
| $X^{t}$ | The transpose of vector or matrix X |

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

### 1.1 Review and Problems

### 1.1.1 Sequential testing of composite hypotheses

Sequential testing of hypotheses began in 1943 with the Sequential Probability Ratio Test (SPRT) proposed by Abraham Wald. Let $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots, Y_{k}, \ldots$, be a sequence of independent and identically distributed random varialles with a common one-parameter density function $f(\cdot ; \theta)$. Wald's SPRT procedure for testing the simple null hypothesis $H_{0}: \theta=\theta_{0}$ versus the simple alternative $H_{A}: \theta=\theta_{A}$ is to stop sampling and accept $H_{0}$ as soon as $L_{k} \geq A$ or stop sampling and accept $H_{A}$ as soon as $L_{k} \leq B$, where $0<B<1<A$ are constant stopping boundaries dictated by error probabilities $\alpha=P_{\theta_{1}}\left(\right.$ Reject $\left.H_{0}\right)$ and $\beta=P_{\theta_{A}}\left(\right.$ Reject $\left.H_{A}\right)$, and

$$
L_{k}=\frac{\prod_{i=1}^{k} f\left(y_{i} ; \theta_{0}\right)}{\prod_{i=1}^{k} f\left(y_{i} ; \theta_{4}\right)},
$$

is the likelihood ratio based on the $k$ observations available thus far. The sample size, $N$, at which the boundaries are crossed, is a random variable. The
mean of $N$ is known as Average Sample Number (ASN) or average stopping time. Wald and Wolfowitz (1948) showed that the so defined SPRT procedure is optimal in the sense of minimizing the stopping times among all tests possessing a finite ASN and with error probabilities $\alpha$ and $\beta$.

The original SPRT did not deal with composite hypotheses, which were composite either because the null and/or alternative parameter spaces are not single points or because of the presence of nuisance parameters. Wald attempted without much success to adapt the SPRT to the composite hypotheses case by introducing the weight functions approach. Another attempt to extend the SPRT to the case of nuisance parameters produced the so-called Invariant SPRT (Ghosh 1970). This method consists of reducing the composite hypotheses to simple hypotheses by transforming the data as well as the hypotheses of interest and then applying Wald's SPRT procedure. According to Lai (2001), this approach has a few drawbacks that makes it difficult to implement.

In a case where the hypotheses of interest are composite because of the presence of nuisance parameters, a third approach suggested by Bartlett (1949), Cox (1963) and Breslow (1969) is based on using the likelihood ratio, or an asymptotically equivalent form of it, under the assumption of contiguity. The method replaces muisance parameters in the likelihood ratio by their restricted maximum likelihood estimators and uses Wald's SPRT procedure. Based on the assumption that the parameters are close, i.e. $\left|\theta_{A}-\theta_{0}\right|=$ $O\left(N^{-1 / 2}\right)$, the Taylor expansion is truncated at the second order terms. Because the sample size $N$ is a ranclom variable with range $(0, \infty)$ the error made by truncation at the second term is not negligible. Alternatively, Gombay $(1996,1997)$ provided some tests based on the generalized sequential likelihood
ratio (GLR) along with their asymptotic critical values at significance level $\alpha$.
Sequential testing of hypotheses was introduced into clinical trials during the 50 's (Armitage 1960). As an alternative to the SPRTs, Armitage suggested the so-called Repeated Significance Test (RST). This method has some limitations which are removed in group sequential analysis introduced by Pocock (1977) and O'Brien and Fleming (1979). In this case, if no treatment difference is olserved the trial will continue to its maximum sample size. This will be somewhat larger than the sample size required for a fixed-sample design of equivalent power.

The problem of comparing three or more treatments is frequently faced in clinical trials. Siegmund (1993) and Betensky (1996) studied the case of three treatments in the simplest situation of independent, normally distributed random variables with a common known variance. To make these procedures more useful in practice it is necessary to extend them to the case of unknown and perhaps unequal variances, and to the case of more than three treatments. It seems likely that the methods of Siegmund (1985), Section 5.4, could be applied although the analytic approximations will become more complicated.

### 1.1.2 Change-point problems

Sequential change-point detection problems have many important applications, including industrial quality control, reliability, fault detection, clinical trials, finance, signal detection, surveillance and security systems. Extensive research has been done in this field during the last few decades. For recent reviews, we refer readers to Csörgő and Horváth (1997), Basseville and Nikiforov (1993) and Lai (1995).

In sequential change-point problems, one observes a sequence of independent observations $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots$ from some process. Initially, the process is in control, i.e., the Y's have some distribution $f_{0}$. At some unknown time $\tau$, the process may go out of control and the Y's have another distribution $f_{A}$. The problem is to detect the change with a high power and as soon as possible while keeping false alarms as infrecquent as possible.

When both the pre-change distribution $f_{0}$ and post-distribution $f_{A}$ are completely specified, the problem is well understood and has been solved under a variety of criteria. Some popular procedures are Shewhart's control charts, Moving Average control charts, Page's CUSUM procedure, and the ShiryayevRoberts procedure.

Perhaps the most successful algorithm of sequential change detection is Page's (1954) CUSUM test. If the interest is in the mean parameter, this test will monitor the partial sums

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{k}-\min _{1 \leq j \leq k} S_{j}, \quad k=1,2, \ldots, \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $S_{k}=\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i}-r\right)$ and $r$ is a reference value, and will indicate change from the initial $\mu_{0}$ mean value to $\mu_{A}, \mu_{A}>\mu_{0}$, at time $k$, when statistic (1.1) is large enough.

This basic idea of change detection has several variations. The most famous is the case when the sums in (1.1) are not based on the initial observations $Y_{i}$, but on the ratios

$$
\begin{equation*}
r_{i}=\log \frac{f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}\right)}{f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{A}\right)}, \quad i=1,2, \ldots \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the purpose is to detect change from the initial parameter value $\theta_{0}$ to the new value $\theta_{A}$. Lorden (1971) and Moustakides (1986) have shown that
algorithms based on (1.1) and (1.2) are optimal in the sense of minimizing the expected value of the stopping time after change, while keeping the expected stopping time under the null hypothesis of no change at a desired level.

In practice, the assumption of known pre-change distribution $f_{0}$ and post distribution $f_{A}$ is too restrictive. Motivated by applications in statistical quality control, the standard formulation of a more flexible model assumes that the pre-change distribution $f_{0}$ is given and the post-change distribution $f_{A}$ involves unknown parameters. However, as shown by many examples, there are many situations in practice in which both the pre-change and the postchange distriluutions intrinsically involve unknown parameters.

So, for practical purposes this case has to be extended to the case of composite hypotheses. The natural idea is to use the generalized likelihood ratio in place of the sum of variables in (1.1). It has been tried, but computational difficulties (see Baseville and Nikiforov (1993)) have prevented its widespread use. Also, there are theoretical problems with its extension to cases involving nuisance parameters (see Gombay (2002, 2003b) for detailed discussion). The essence of the reason for these problems is that the generalized likelihood ratio is not like a partial sums sequence, but a quadratic form. There is, however, a statistic that is closely related to the generalized likelihood ratio and behaves approximately like a partial sums sequence. This is the efficient score vector, the main component of Rao's statistic, which is a quadratic form made with the help of the efficient score vector, and behaves, asymptotically the same way as the generalized likelihood ratio (see Gombay (1997) for detailed discussion).

In this thesis we assume that the pre-change distribution $f_{0}=f\left(y ; \theta_{0} ; \eta\right)$ depends on two vectors of parameters $\theta_{0}$ and $\eta$, where $\theta_{0}$, the vector of parameters of interest is known, and $\eta$ is the vector of musance parameters. The
post-change distribution is of the form $f_{A}=f\left(y ; \theta_{A}, \eta\right)$ with $\theta_{A}$ unknown.
The methods discussed so far assume independent observations. As Wetherill (1977) has pointed out, observations from modern industrial processes are often autocorrelated and the process itself can behave like an autoregressive process. Such behaviour must be taken into account when setting up testing procedures.

Most procedures in the literature are based on residuals (see Kulperger (1985), Bai (1993), and Horváth (1993)) or on the one-step-ahead prediction errors (see Montgomery and Friedman (1989)). There are several extensions of CUSUM and GLR schemes to handle non-independent observations. In principle, Page's likelihood ratio CUSUM scheme•(Page, 1955) can be easily extended to non-independent observations, simply by replacing $f\left(Y_{i}\right)$ by $f\left(Y_{i} \mid Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{i-1}\right)$. However, as Basseville and Nikiforov (1993) noted, practical implementation of the GLR algorithm is not always possible because the number of computations at time $n$ grows very fast to infinity with $n$ and maximization of the log-likelihood over $\theta \in \Theta$ must be carried out for each possible change time $k$ between 1 and $n$. So these algorithms cannot be computed in realtime to support on-line decisions. Our procedure which is based on the efficient score vector has no such limitations.

### 1.2 Overview of the thesis

As mentioned in the previous section, sequential testing of composite hypotheses has not yet received an adequate fully-sequential treatment. In this thesis we use large sample approximations of the efficient score vector to develop new CUSUM-type procedures for sequential testing of hypotheses in presence of nuisance parameters. The main attractive features of these procedures are:

- A generality allowing application of the methods to a wide class of distribution families including the exponential family.
- Simple accommodation of the nuisance parametcrs. In fact only the nuisance parameters have to be estimated giving a simpler algorithm.
- The simple structure of the efficient score vector allows the definition of the CUSUM-type test which is not feasible for the generalized likelihood ratio and the m.l.e. based on Wald's statistic sequence.
- Different test statistics are used for testing for a change in different parameters as the tests are based on the corresponding components of the efficient score vector.
- Easy-to-compute approximate boundaries (critical values) which do not require any numerical integration.

This thesis has five objectives:

1. Development of a class of CUSUM-type sequential procedures for testing for a change in the parameters of the distribution of a sequence of independent observations. The distribution may be from the non-exponential family. This extends the results of Gombay (2003a).
2. Extension of the procedures to the case of non-independent observations. More specifically, we consider the case of testing for a change in the parameters of an autoregressive process of order $p, \operatorname{AR}(p)$.
3. To compute the critical values and show how the tests of Gombay (2003) based on Rao's statistic can be used for sequential comparison of three or more treatments.
4. To adapt the CUSUM test to the ANOVA change-point problem.
5. Empirical comparison of our test procedures to some other methods, in term of power and average stopping time.

Specifically, in Chapter 2 we shall consider the case of independent observations. As the efficient score vector behaves approximately as partial sum sequences, the CUSUM idea of Page (1954) can be used to improve performance for detection of later changes. Monte Carlo simulations are carried out in order to assess the power of the new CUSUM-type sequential test.

In Chapter 3, the same method is extended to the case of autocorrelated observations. When the observations come from an $\operatorname{AR}$ (p) process it turns out that the distribution and the rate of convergence of the test statistic is the same as in the case of independent observations.

In Chapter 4, we will present and compare some procedures based on Rao's statistic for testing equality of three or more treatments. We compare these procedures with the sequential F-test proposed by Siegmund (1980). At the end we show how the CUSUM test can be used for an ANOVA changepoint problem.

## Chapter 2

## A CUSUM-Type Sequential Test

### 2.1 Preliminaries

One of the major aims of Statistical Process Control (SPC) is to achieve the condition where the parameters related to a given manufacturing, business, ecological or similar process, conform to some prescribed on-target behaviour. In many practical applications it is not reasonable to assume that the same model remains adequate as time progresses. Over time, something will inevitably change and possibly cause deterioration in process quality. Something that affects process quality is assumed to be reffected by a change in the parameters so the basic goal of process monitoring is to detect changes in the parameters that can occur at unknown time. In practical situations the relevant model involves not only the parameters of interest but also some nuisance parameters which are not monitored but they influence the functionality of the process.

In this chapter a truncated CUSUM-type sequential test is proposed to detect an abrupt change in the distribution of a sequence of independent observations. The test is based on large sample approximations of the efficient score vector under the null hypothesis of no change and under the alternative hypothesis of change at an mknown time.

The problem can be described in general terms as follows. Suppose $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots$, are independent random variables/vectors observed sequentially, i.e., one at a time, and let $f\left(y ; \theta_{i}, \eta_{i}\right)$ be the density function with respect to a $\sigma$-finite measure $\nu$. The distribution function is denoted by $F(\cdot ; \theta, \eta)$. We assume that $\theta \in \Omega_{1} \subset \mathbb{R}^{d}, d \geq 1$, and that $\eta \in \Omega_{2} \subset \mathbb{R}^{p}, p \geq 0$, and the parameter space is $\Omega=\Omega_{1} \times \Omega_{2} \subset \mathbb{R}^{d+p}$. We use the notation $\xi=(\theta, \eta)$. In statistical terms $\theta$ will be the parameter of interest and $\eta$ will be the nuisance parameter. We are interested in testing the composite null hypothesis

$$
H_{0}: \theta_{i}=\theta_{0}, \eta_{i}=\eta \in \Omega_{2}, \quad i=1,2, \ldots,
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}: \begin{cases}\theta_{i}=\theta_{0}, & \eta_{i}=\eta \in \Omega_{2},  \tag{2.1}\\ \theta_{i}=\theta_{A}, & \quad \eta_{i}=\eta \in \tau, \\ \Omega_{2}, & i \geq \tau .\end{cases}
$$

where $\tau$ is the unknown time of change, $\theta_{0}$ is the known initial value of the parameter, and parameter values $\eta, \theta_{A}$ are also unknown. For example, in quality control the initial value $\theta_{0}$ is the required measurement or target value, and change from it has to be detected.

Before presenting the test statistic and its asymptotic null distribution we will give some notations and regularity conditions that are needed. We denote by

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{i j}(\xi)=-E_{\xi}\left[\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \xi_{i} \partial \xi_{j}} \log f(Y ; \xi)\right] \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

the entries of the Fisher information matrix, $I$, where $i, j=1,2, \ldots, d+p$. We shall partition this matrix as

$$
\boldsymbol{I}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
I_{11} & I_{12} \\
I_{21} & I_{22}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where

$$
I_{11}=\left(-E \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \theta_{i} \partial \theta_{j}} \log f(Y ; \xi)\right)_{d \times d}, \quad I_{22}=\left(-E \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \eta_{i} \partial \eta_{j}} \log f(Y ; \xi)\right)_{p \times p}
$$

and $I_{!_{2}}=I_{21}^{\prime}=\left(-E \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \theta_{i} \partial \eta_{j}} \log f(Y ; \xi)\right)_{d \times p}$.
The inverse of $I$ will also be partitioned and denoted by

$$
I^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
I^{11} & I^{12} \\
I^{21} & I^{22}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Suppose that $\xi=(\theta, \eta)$ is a point in all open subset $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{d+p}$. The following regularity and existence conditions are needed

C1. The distribution function $F(\cdot ; \theta, \eta)$, is identifiable over $\Omega$.

C2. There exists an open subset, $\Omega_{0} \subset \Omega$, containing $\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$, the true value of the parameter under $H_{0}$, where the partial derivatives,

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_{i}} \log f(y ; \xi), \quad \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \xi_{i} \partial \xi_{j}} \log f(y ; \xi), \text { and } \frac{\partial^{3}}{\partial \xi_{i} \partial \xi_{j} \partial \xi_{k}} \log f(y ; \xi),
$$

exist and are contimuous for all $y \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\xi \in \Omega_{0}$.

C3. For each $\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right) \in \Omega_{0}, k=1,2, \ldots$, and $j<k$ the score equations

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)=0 \\
& \sum_{i=j}^{k} \nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)=0
\end{aligned}
$$

have unique solutions, $\hat{\eta}_{k}$ and $\hat{\eta}_{k, j}$, respectively.

C4. Under the setup of C2, there are functions $M_{1}(y), M I_{2}(y)$ such that

$$
\int M_{1}(y) \nu(d y)<\infty, \text { and } E_{\xi}\left[M_{2}(Y)\right]<\infty
$$

with

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left|\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_{i}} \log f(y ; \xi)\right| \leq M_{1}(y),\left|\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \xi_{i} \partial \xi_{j}} \log f(y ; \xi)\right| \leq M_{2}(y), \\
\text { and }\left|\frac{\partial^{3}}{\partial \xi_{i} \partial \xi_{j} \partial \xi_{k}} \log f(y ; \xi)\right| \leq M_{2}(y),
\end{gathered}
$$

for all $\xi \in \Omega_{0}$, and $1 \leq i, j, k \leq d+p$.

C5. $E_{\xi}\left[\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_{i}} \log f(Y ; \xi)\right]=0$, for all $1 \leq i \leq d+p$, and $\xi \in \Omega_{0}$.
C6. $I_{i j}(\xi)=-E_{\xi}\left[\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \xi_{i} \partial \xi_{j}} \log f(Y ; \xi)\right]$ and $I^{-1}(\xi)$ exist and are contimuous for all $\xi \in \Omega_{0}$, and $1 \leq i, j \leq d+p$.

C7. $\operatorname{Var}_{\xi}\left[\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \xi_{i} \partial \xi_{j}} \log f\left(Y ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right]<\infty$, for $1 \leq i, j \leq d+p$.
C8. $E_{\theta_{1}, \eta}\left[\left|\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \xi_{i}^{2}} \log f\left(Y ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right|^{2+\delta}\right]<\infty$, for all $i=1,2, \ldots, d+p$, and some $\delta>0$.

Remark 2.1 Conditions C1 - C6 are the usual classical regularity conditions guaranteeing the existence and consistence of a sequence of MLE's (c.f. Lehmann 2001, Serfling 1980). The last two conditions are, respectively, required by the Law of the Iterated Logarithm (Serfting (1980)), and by the strong invariance principles of Csörgő and Révész (1981) that are used in this thesis.

### 2.2 The CUSUM test

The truncated CUSUM-type sequential test proposed here is based on the efficient score vector which is defined as

$$
V_{k}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\xi} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)
$$

Because the musance parameter $\eta$ is present we have to replace it by its restricted maximum likelihood estimator $\hat{\eta}_{k}$, that is, by the solution of equation

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \eta\right)=0 .
$$

When we replace $\eta$ by $\hat{\eta}_{k} V_{k}$ simplifies to

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{k}=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\xi} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{0} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) . \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following theorem states that under $H_{0} V_{k}$ defined in (2.3) can be written approximately as a sum of independent $d$-dimensional random vectors.

Theorem 2.1 Under $H_{0}$, if $\mathrm{C} 1-\mathrm{C} 8$ hold, then $V_{k}$ can be represented as

$$
\begin{align*}
V_{k}= & \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) \\
= & \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)-\nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right\} \\
& +O(\log \log k) \\
= & \sum_{i=1}^{k} Z_{i}+O(\log \log k) \quad \text { a.s. }, \tag{2.4}
\end{align*}
$$

as $k \rightarrow \infty$, where $Z_{i}$ are i.i.d.r.v's with $E Z_{i}=0, \operatorname{Cov}\left(Z_{i}\right)=\Gamma\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$, $\Gamma\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)=I_{11}-I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}$.

Proof. We can write

$$
\begin{align*}
V_{k} & =\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)+\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right\} . \tag{2.5}
\end{align*}
$$

The last term in the above sum represents the error committed in estimating $\eta$ by its restricted MLE $\hat{\eta}_{k}$. The error can be linearized by using a three-term Taylor expansion of $\nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)$ around the true parameter value $\eta$, so that (2.5) can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{k}=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \eta\right)+\left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta\right) \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta_{1}}^{2} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \eta\right)+R_{k}\left(\eta^{*}\right) \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\eta^{*}$ is a point between $\hat{\eta}_{k}$ and $\eta$ and $\nabla_{\theta_{\eta}}^{2}$ denotes a $p \times d$ - matrix of second order partial derivatives, first with respect to components of $\theta$ and secondly with respect to components of $\eta$. The term $R_{k}\left(\eta^{*}\right)$ is a row vector whose $r^{\text {th }}$ component has the form

$$
\frac{1}{2} \sum_{l=1}^{p} \sum_{q=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\eta}_{k q}-\eta_{q}\right)\left(\hat{\eta}_{k l}-\eta_{l}\right) \times\left\{\sum_{i=1}^{k} \frac{\partial^{3}}{\partial \eta_{q} \partial \eta_{l} \partial \theta_{\gamma}} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta^{*}\right)\right\} .
$$

By the Strong Law of Large Numbers and by C4, the terms in the curly brackets are almost surely $O(k)$. On the other hand, by Lemma 2.1 of Gombay and Horváth (1994),

$$
\left|\left(\hat{\eta}_{k q}-\eta_{q}\right)\left(\hat{\eta}_{k l}-\eta_{l}\right)\right|=O\left(\frac{\log \log k}{k}\right) \text { a.s. }
$$

Hence we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{k}\left(\eta^{*}\right)=O(\log \log k) \quad \text { a.s. } \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

In order to obtain an expression for $\left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta\right.$ ), we shall analyze the following
three-term Taylor expansion

$$
\begin{align*}
\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)-\nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right\}= & \left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta\right) \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta^{2}}^{2} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \eta\right) \\
& +R_{k}^{\prime}\left(\eta^{* *}\right) \tag{2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\nabla_{\eta^{2}}^{2}$ is the $p \times p$-matrix of partial derivatives with respect to the components of $\eta$. By the same arguments leading to (2.7), the error term above is almost surely of order $O(\log \log k)$. On the other hand, by C4 and the Law of Iterated Logarithm we have

$$
\left\|\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta^{2}}^{2} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \eta\right)+k I_{22}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right\|=O(\sqrt{k \log \log k}) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

From (2.8) and by the definition of $\hat{\eta}_{k}$ we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
-\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)= & \left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta\right)\left[\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta^{2}}^{2} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)+k I_{22}-k I_{22}\right] \\
& +O(\log \log k) \\
= & \left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta\right)\left[\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta^{2}}^{2} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)+k I_{22}\right] \\
& -k\left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta\right) I_{22}+O(\log \log k) \\
= & O(\log \log k)-k\left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta\right) I_{22}+O(\log \log k)
\end{aligned}
$$

and because $I_{22}^{-1}$ exists we can write

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta\right)=\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{22}^{-1}+O\left(k^{-1} \log \log k\right) \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, collecting (2.6), (2.7) and (2.9) we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
V_{k}= & \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) \\
& +\left[\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)+O\left(\frac{\log \log k}{k}\right)\right] \\
& \times\left[\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta_{\eta}}^{2} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right]+O(\log \log k) \\
= & \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) \\
& +\left[\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)+O(\log \log k)\right] \\
& \times\left[\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta_{\eta}}^{2} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right]+O(\log \log k) . \tag{2.10}
\end{align*}
$$

By using again C6 and LIL we have

$$
\left\|\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta_{\eta}}^{2} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)+I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right\|=O\left(\sqrt{\frac{\log \log k}{k}}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

Then it follows from (2.10) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
V_{k}= & \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) \\
& +\left[\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)+O(\log \log k \cdot)\right] \\
& \times\left[-I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)+O\left(\sqrt{\frac{\log \log k}{k}}\right)\right]+O(\log \log k),
\end{aligned}
$$

and neglecting errors of amplitude less then $O(\log \log k)$ this is equivalent to

$$
\begin{aligned}
V_{k}= & \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)-\nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right\} \\
& +O(\log \log k) \\
= & \sum_{i=1}^{k} Z_{i}+O(\log \log k)
\end{aligned}
$$

that is, relation (2.4) with $Z_{i}=\nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)-\nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}$. By C5 it follows that $E_{\theta_{1}, \eta}\left(Z_{i}\right)=0$ for all $i$. If we denote $X_{1 i}=\nabla_{0} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ and $X_{2 i}=\nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ we can write $Z_{i}=X_{1 i}-X_{2 i} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}$. Denote by the superscript $t$ the transpose of a vector or matrix. Now we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{Cov}\left(Z_{i}\right)= & E\left[Z_{i}^{t} Z_{i}\right] \\
= & E\left[\left(X_{1 i}^{t}-I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} X_{2 i}^{t}\right)\left(X_{1 i}-X_{2 i} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}\right)\right] \\
= & E\left[X_{1 i}^{t} X_{1 i}\right]-E\left[X_{1 i}^{t} X_{2 i} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}\right] \\
& -E\left[I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} X_{2 i}^{t} X_{1 i}\right]+E\left[I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} X_{2 i}^{t} X_{2 i} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}\right] \\
= & \operatorname{Cov}\left(X_{1 i}\right)-E\left[X_{1 i}^{t} X_{2 i} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}\right. \\
& -I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} E\left[X_{2 i}^{t} X_{1 i}\right]+I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} \operatorname{Cov}\left(X_{2 i}\right) I_{22}^{-1} I_{21} \\
= & I_{11}-I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}-I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}+I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} I_{22} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21} \\
= & I_{11}-I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21},
\end{aligned}
$$

and the proof of the theorem is completed.

Based on Theorem 2.1 we can define a truncated CUSUM-type sequential test. For each $k \geq 2$, and each $1 \leq j<k$, the efficient score vector based on $Y_{j}, \ldots, Y_{k}$, is denoted by

$$
V_{k, j}=\sum_{i=j}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right)
$$

where $\hat{\eta}_{k, j}$ is defined in C3. Under $H_{0}$, by Theorem 2.1, $V_{k . j}$ can be represented as

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{k, j}=\sum_{i=j}^{k} Z_{i}+O(\log \log (k-j)) \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $Z_{i}$ independent random vectors with mean zero and covariance matrix $\Gamma\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ defined in Theorem 2.1. Then, when $d=1$

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{k, j}=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right) V_{k, j}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right)=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right) \sum_{i=j}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right) \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

is approximately the sum of independent mean 0 and variance 1 r.v's.
Remark 2.2 When $d>1$ the vector $W_{k, j}$ has uncorrelated components and we can choose the approximating process with independent. components. In this way we can monitor each component with a level $\alpha^{*}$ test which gives an overall level of significance $\alpha=1-\left(1-\alpha^{*}\right)^{d}$. Hence it is enough to define a test for the case $d=1$.

It is easy to see that under $H_{0}$, if $d=1$, as $n_{0} \rightarrow \infty$
$\max _{2 \leq j<k \leq m u} \frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right) V_{k, j}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right) \xrightarrow{\mathcal{D}} \sup _{0 \leq u<v \leq 1}\{W(v)-W(u)\} \stackrel{\mathcal{D}}{=} \sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1}|W(t)|$
where $W(t)$ is a standard Wiener process and $n_{0}$ a fixed truncation point. An elementary proof of the last identity can be found in Gombay (1994).

In order for this result to be useful in testing liypotheses we need to replace the covariance matrix $\Gamma\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ with an estimated version. By Lemma 2 of Gombay et al. (2001) the asymptotic distribution in (2.13) remains the same if $\eta$ is replaced by its restricted m.l.e. $\hat{\eta}_{l}$ in $\Gamma\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$.

Remark $2.3 \hat{\eta}_{k}$ and $\hat{\eta}_{k, j}$ need not to be the unique solution of the restricted log-likielihood equation. All we need is that the estimator converges weakly to the parameter $\eta$ with a rate of at least $k^{-1 / 2}$. This can be attained by, say, a one-step estimator based on the Newton-Raphson iterative procedure (see Lehmann 2001, p.475). Therefore condition C3 requiring that $\hat{\eta}_{k}$ and $\hat{\eta}_{k . j}$ be the unique MLE's can be relaxed accordingly.

The test is defined as follows.
CUSUM TEST. For $k=2,3, \ldots, n_{0}$ compute

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{k}=\max _{1 \leq j<k} \frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) V_{k, j}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right) . \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Stop and conclude that $H_{0}$ is not supported by the data at the first $k$ when $T_{k}>C(\alpha)$. Do not reject $H_{0}$ if it is not rejected by $k=n_{0}$.

The critical value $C(\alpha)$ can be oltained from the well known formula (Borodin and Salminen (1996))

$$
1-\alpha=\frac{4}{\pi} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{k}}{2 k+1} \exp \left(-\frac{\pi^{2}(2 k+1)^{2}}{8 C(\alpha)^{2}}\right),
$$

For example $\mathrm{C}(0.10)=1.96, \mathrm{C}(0.05)=2.24, \mathrm{C}(0.02 .5)=2.50$, and $\mathrm{C}(0.01)=2.80$.
Remark 2.4 As the partial sums have components $Z_{i}=\nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ $\nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \eta\right) I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}$ with $\eta$ the true value of the parameter, alternatively. we may use $V_{k, j}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)$ in the test statistic $T_{k}$. It is the empirical properties that guide our choice in each case. Using $\hat{\eta}_{k}$ in $T_{k}$ of (2.14) is computationally more efficient.

### 2.3 Applications

### 2.3.1 Normally distributed observations

First we consider the simplest case of independent normally distributed observations. We present the tests for monitoring the mean and the variance. In the same way we can define a test for monitoring both parameters simultaneously.
a) Monitoring the mean of a normal distribution. Consider $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots$, a sequence of independent normal random variables with mean $\mu$ and variance $\sigma^{2}$, and suppose we are interested in testing'

$$
H_{0}: \mu_{i}=\mu_{0}, \sigma_{i}^{2}=\sigma^{2} \text { unknown, } \quad i=1,2, \ldots,
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\mu_{i}=\mu_{0}, \quad \sigma_{i}^{2}=\sigma^{2} \text { unknown, } \quad i<\tau, \\
\mu_{i}=\mu_{A}>\mu_{0}, \quad \sigma_{i}^{2}=\sigma^{2} \text { unknown, } \quad i \geq \tau
\end{array}\right.
$$

Without loss of generality we can assume $\mu_{0}=0$. For simplicity we consider the re-parametrization $\theta=\frac{\mu}{\sigma^{2}}$ and $\eta=-\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{2}}<0$. Under this reparametrization, the hypothesis to be tested becomes

$$
H_{0}: \theta_{i}=0, \eta_{i}=\eta \text { unknown, } \quad i=1,2, \ldots,
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\theta_{i}=0, \quad \eta_{i}=\eta \text { unknown, } \quad i<\tau \\
\theta_{i}=\theta_{A}>0, \quad \eta_{i}=\eta \text { unknown, } \quad i \geq \tau .
\end{array}\right.
$$

In this case $d=p=1$, and computations give $\hat{\eta}_{k}=-\frac{k}{2 \sum_{i=1}^{k} r_{i}^{2}}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}=$ $-\frac{k+1-j}{2 \sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}^{2}}$, and $V_{k, j}\left(0, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right)=\sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}$. The information matrix is

$$
\boldsymbol{I}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\eta & 0 \\
0 & 2 \eta
\end{array}\right)
$$

which implies $\Gamma(0, \eta)=\eta$. Then

$$
\hat{W}_{k, j}=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(0, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) V_{k, j}\left(0, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right)=\frac{\sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}}{\sqrt{\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i}^{2}}},
$$

and

$$
T_{k}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \hat{W}_{k \cdot j}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \frac{\sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}}{\sqrt{\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i}^{2}}}
$$

b) Monitoring the variance of a normal distribution. Consider again $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots$, a sequence of independent normal random variables with mean $\mu$ and variance $\sigma^{2}$, but now we are interested in testing

$$
H_{0}: \sigma_{i}^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}, \quad \mu_{i}=\mu \text { unknown, } \quad i=1,2, \ldots,
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\sigma_{i}^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}, \quad \mu_{i}=\mu \text { unknown, } \quad i=<\tau \\
\sigma_{i}^{2}=\sigma_{A}^{2}>\sigma_{0}^{2}, \quad \mu_{i}=\mu \text { unknown, } \quad i \geq \tau
\end{array}\right.
$$

For simplicity we use the re-parametrization $\theta=\frac{-1}{2 \sigma^{2}}$ and $\eta=\frac{-\eta}{\sigma^{2}}$. Again $d=p=1$ and computations give $\hat{\eta}_{k}=-2 \theta_{0} \frac{\sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i}}{k}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}=-2 \theta_{0} \frac{\sum_{i=i}^{k} Y_{i}}{k+1-j}$, and $V_{k, j}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right)=\sum_{i=j}^{k}\left(Y_{i}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}-\hat{\mu}_{k, j}^{2}\right)$. The information matrix is

$$
I=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
-\frac{\eta^{2}}{2 \theta^{3}}+\frac{1}{2 \theta^{2}} & \frac{\eta}{2 \theta^{2}} \\
\frac{\eta}{2 \theta^{2}} & -\frac{1}{20}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Then

$$
\hat{W}_{k, j}=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) V_{k, j}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right)=\sum_{i=j}^{k} \frac{\left(Y_{i}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}-\hat{\mu}_{k, j}^{2}\right)}{\sigma_{0}^{2} \sqrt{2}}
$$

where $\hat{\mu}_{k, j}^{2}=\frac{\sum_{k=i}^{k} r_{i}}{k-j+1}$. The test is based on

$$
T_{k}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \hat{W}_{k, j}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \sum_{i=j}^{k} \frac{\left(Y_{i}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}-\hat{\mu}_{k, j}^{2}\right)}{\sigma_{0}^{2} \sqrt{2}} .
$$

### 2.3.2 The nested random effects model

In this subsection we consider the case of monitoring the parameters of a nested random effects model. We assume that observations come in as a sequence indexed by time $i$, and they have the following structure

$$
\begin{gathered}
X_{i r n}=\mu+L_{i}+W_{r(i)}+E_{i r n}, \quad i=1,2, \ldots, \\
r=1,2, \ldots, R, \text { and } n=1,2, \ldots, N,
\end{gathered}
$$

where we assume that $L_{i} \sim N\left(0, \sigma_{b}^{2}\right), W_{r(i)} \sim N\left(0, \sigma_{w}^{2}\right)$, and $E_{i r n} \sim N\left(0, \sigma^{2}\right)$ are independent normal random variables with corresponding variances as the second parameter. $L_{i}$ is called factor $A$ random effect, $W_{r(i)}$ nested random effect of factor $B$ within the $i^{\text {th }}$ level of factor $A$, while $E_{i r n}$ is the random
error term of observation $n$ within the $i^{\text {th }}$ level of factor $A$ and the $r(i)^{\text {th }}$ level of factor $B$.

Yashchin (1995) used this model to monitor electronic chip quality. In his example $L_{i}$ corresponds to lot effect, $W_{r(i)}$ to wafer effect in wafer $r$ of lot $i$, and $E_{i r n}$ is the random noise of the measurement of the $n^{\text {th }}$ chip in wafer $r$ of the lot $i$. Without loss of generality we can assume that $R$ is the number of wafers randomly selected from each lot for the purpose of monitoring and let $N$ be the size of a random sample chips taken from cach wafer. In the above model $\sigma_{b}, \sigma_{w}$, and $\sigma$ represent the lot-to-lot, wafer-to-wafer within-lot, and within-wafer components of variability. For each such a model, one will usually need to monitor not only the mean and the measure of total variance, but also its individual components. This is important for the following reasons. First, knowing which component of variance is out of control is important for diagnosing the problem, because different components are usually affected by different special causes. Second, the ability of screening procedures to improve the outgoing quality depends strongly on the individual variance components: for a fixed total variance, the higher the proportion of variance due to nested factors, the more difficult it is to screen out defective products (c.f., Yashchin 1995).

On the other hand, in cases where we deal with several sources of variability, the conventional control charts tend to produce an unacceptably high rate of false alarms and in general represent a rather weak diagnostic tool.

To solve the problem, Yashchin (1995) used the likelihood ratio in various forms to monitor change in the variance components, treating all other parameters of the model as nuisance. His approach has several drawbacks: the design, analysis, and implementation are relatively complex, and more important, the sensitivity is highly dependent on the levels of nuisance parameters. Atenafu and Gombay (2004) used the generalized likelihood ratio for the se-
quential procedures. Their procedure accommodates nuisance parameters but there is a decrease in power when the change is not at the beginning of the sequence.

Here we use the truncated CUSUM-type sequential test (2.14). From our simulations will be seen that the CUSUM-type sequential test is more powerful in detecting a change in the distribution.

Now we shall give the exact formulae of the test statistic $T_{k}$ for monitoring the parameters indicated. Note that the extension of the monitoring process to the case of non-exponential family of distributions is needed when monitoring $\sigma_{w}^{2}$ and $\sigma_{b}^{2}$.
a) Monitoring the mean $\mu$. The test statistic is based on the distribution of the estimator for the mean within $i^{\text {th }}$ level of factor A

$$
Y_{i}=\hat{\mu}_{i}=\frac{1}{R N} \sum_{r=1}^{R} \sum_{n=1}^{N} X_{i r n}
$$

which, under $H_{0}$ is normal with mean $\mu$, and variance $\eta=\sigma_{b}^{2}+\frac{\sigma_{n}^{2}}{R}+\frac{\sigma^{2}}{R N}$. The variance $\eta$ is the nuisance parameter. When $\mu_{0}=0$, the maximum likelihood estimator is

$$
\hat{\eta}_{k, j}=\frac{1}{k+1-j} \sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}^{2},
$$

and

$$
\hat{W}_{k, j}=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(0, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) V_{k . j}\left(0, \hat{\eta}_{k . j}\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i}^{2}}} \sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i} .
$$

The test is based on

$$
T_{k}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \hat{W}_{k, j}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \frac{1}{\sqrt{\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i}^{2}}} \sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}^{\prime}
$$

b) Monitoring $\sigma^{2}$. The estimator of $\sigma^{2}$ at the $i^{\text {th }}$ level of factor A is $Z_{i}=\hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}=\frac{1}{R} \sum_{r=1}^{R} S_{i r}^{2}$ where $S_{i r}^{2}=\frac{1}{N-1} \sum_{n=1}^{N}\left(X_{i r n}-\bar{X}_{i r}\right)^{2}$ and $\bar{X}_{i r}^{2}=$
$\frac{1}{N} \sum_{n=1}^{N} X_{i r n} . \frac{N-1}{\sigma^{2}} S_{i r}^{2}$ has a $\chi_{N-1}^{2}$ distribution and $S_{i r}^{2}$ and $S_{i q}^{2}$ are independent if $r \neq 4$, so the density of $Z_{i}$ can be calculated by simple transformation methods from the chi-square distribution with $\nu_{1}=R(N-1)$ degree of freedom. In this case there is no nuisance parameter, i.e. $p=0$, and

$$
\hat{W}_{k, j}=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\sigma_{0}^{2}\right) V_{k, j}\left(\sigma_{0}^{2}\right)=\sqrt{\frac{\nu_{1}}{2}} \frac{1}{\sigma_{0}^{2}} \sum_{i=j}^{k}\left(Y_{i}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right)
$$

The test is defined by

$$
T_{k}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \hat{W}_{k, j}=\sqrt{\frac{\nu_{1}}{2 n_{0}}} \frac{1}{\sigma_{0}^{2}} \sum_{i=j}^{k}\left(Y_{i}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right)
$$

c) Monitoring $\sigma_{w}^{2}$. Denote

$$
U_{i}=\hat{\sigma}_{i .}^{2}=\frac{1}{R-1} \sum_{r=1}^{R}\left(\bar{X}_{i r}-\hat{\mu}_{i}\right)^{2}
$$

which estimates $\sigma_{w}^{2}+\frac{\sigma^{2}}{N}$ in the $i^{t h}$ lot, and $\hat{\mu}_{i}, \hat{\sigma}_{i}^{2}$ as above. Now we use the joint density of vector $\left(Z_{i}, U_{i}\right)$ and the misance parameter is $\frac{\sigma^{2}}{N}$. With $\nu_{2}=R-1$, the computations give

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Gamma\left(\sigma_{0 w}^{2}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)=\frac{\nu_{1} \nu_{2}}{2\left[\nu_{1}\left(\hat{\eta}_{k}+\sigma_{0 w}^{2}\right)^{2}+\nu_{2} \hat{\eta}_{k}^{2}\right]} \\
& V_{k, j}\left(\sigma_{0 w}^{2}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right)=\frac{\nu_{2}}{2\left(\hat{\eta}_{k, j}+\sigma_{0 w}^{2}\right)^{2}} \sum_{i=j}^{k}\left[U_{i}-\left(\hat{\eta}_{k, j}+\sigma_{0 w}^{2}\right)\right] \\
& \hat{W}_{k, j}=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\sigma_{0 w}^{2}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) V_{k, j}\left(\sigma_{0 w}^{2}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Here $\hat{\eta}_{k}$ and $\hat{\eta}_{k-j}$ are the solution of two third-degree equations. The test is based on $T_{k}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{i j}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \hat{W}_{k, j}$.
d) Monitoring $\sigma_{b}^{2}$. Now we use the likelihood function of the bivariate statistics $\left(Y_{i}, U_{i}\right)$. The nuisance parameters are $\mu$ and $\xi=\sigma_{w}^{2}+\frac{\sigma_{w}^{2}}{N^{\prime}}$. Under $H_{0}$ the maximum likelihood estimators are $\bar{\mu}_{k, j}=\frac{1}{k+1-j} \sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}$, and $\hat{\xi}_{k, j}$ which
is the solution of a third-degree equation. In this case

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \Gamma\left(\sigma_{0 b}^{2}, \bar{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\xi}_{k}\right)=\frac{R^{2}(R-1)}{2\left[\xi_{0 k}^{2}+(R-1)\left(R \sigma_{0 b}^{2}+\hat{\xi}_{k}\right)^{2}\right]} \\
& V_{k, j}\left(\sigma_{0 b}^{2}, \bar{\mu}_{k, j}, \hat{\xi}_{k \cdot j}\right)=\frac{R^{2}}{2\left(R \sigma_{0 b}^{2}+\hat{\xi}_{k: j}\right)^{2}} \sum_{i=j}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\bar{\mu}_{k, j}\right)^{2}-\frac{R \sigma_{0 b}^{2}+\hat{\xi}_{k, j}}{R}\right], \\
& \hat{W}_{k, j}=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\sigma_{0 b}^{2}, \bar{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\xi}_{k}\right) V_{k, j}\left(\sigma_{0 b}^{2}, \bar{\mu}_{k, j}, \hat{\xi}_{k, j}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and we obtain: $T_{k}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{211}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \hat{W}_{k, j}$.

## e) Simultaneous monitoring of the three variance components

 $\sigma^{2}, \sigma_{w}^{2}, \sigma_{b}^{2}$. In this case $d=3$. The joint density of $\left(Y_{i}, Z_{i}, U_{i}\right)$ can be used. The misance parameter is $\mu$ and the maximum likelihood estimator is $\hat{\mu}_{k, j}=$ $\frac{1}{k+1-j} \sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}$. Now $W_{k, j}$ has three independent components$\hat{W}_{k, j}=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\hat{\mu}_{k}, \sigma_{00}^{2}, \sigma_{0 w}^{2}, \sigma_{0}^{2}\right) V_{k, j}\left(\hat{\mu}_{k, j}, \sigma_{0 b}^{2}, \sigma_{0 w}^{2}, \sigma_{0}^{2}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{c}\sqrt{\frac{\overline{\mu_{2}}}{2}} \frac{1}{\sigma_{0}^{2}} \sum_{i=j}^{k}\left(Z_{i}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right) \\ \sqrt{\frac{T_{2}}{2}} \frac{1}{\xi_{0}} \sum_{i=j}^{k}\left(U_{i}-\xi_{0}\right) \\ \sum_{i=j}^{k} \frac{\left(_{i}^{2}-\eta_{l}-\mu_{k, j}^{2}\right)}{\eta_{i l} \sqrt{2}}\end{array}\right)$.
The three independent components of the test are $T_{k}^{i}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \hat{W}_{k, j}^{(i)}$ for $i=1,2,3$.
f) Simultaneous monitoring of all parameters. In this case $d=4$ and there is no nuisance parameter. The four independent components of the efficient score vector are

$$
\hat{W}_{k, j}=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\mu_{0}, \sigma_{0 b}^{2}, \sigma_{0 w}^{2}, \sigma_{0}^{2}\right) V_{k, j}\left(\mu_{0}, \sigma_{0 b}^{2}, \sigma_{0 w}^{2}, \sigma_{0}^{2}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{c}
\sqrt{\frac{V_{1}}{2}} \frac{1}{\sigma_{0}^{2}} \sum_{i=j}^{k}\left(Z_{i}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right) \\
\sqrt{\frac{\nu_{2}}{2}} \frac{1}{\xi_{0}} \sum_{i=j}^{k}\left(U_{i}-\xi_{0}\right) \\
\frac{1}{\eta_{1 i} \sqrt{2}} \sum_{i=j}^{k}\left(Y_{i}^{2}-\eta_{0}\right) \\
\frac{1}{\sqrt{\eta_{10}}} \sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}
\end{array}\right)
$$

The four components of the test are $T_{k}^{i}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \hat{W}_{k, j}^{(i)}$, for $i=1,2,3,4$.

### 2.4 Simulation Studies

To assess the performance of the new truncated CUSUM-type sequential test we have carried out Monte Carlo experiments using the models described in the previous section. In all tables $n_{0}$ represents the truncation point, $\tau$ is the change point and the level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$. Each scenario in these Monte Carlo simulations is based on 3000 replicates.

### 2.4.1 The case of normally distributed observations

In the case of monitoring the mean of a normal distribution, $\mu_{0}=0$ and $\mu_{A}$ was varied over the set $\{0.0,0.1,0.2,0.3,0.4,0.5,0.6,0.7,0.8,0.9,1.0\}$. The variance (the nuisance parameter) was $\sigma^{2}=1$. Table 2.1 presents the simulated power and average stopping time(AVST) with its standard deviation(SD).

In the case of monitoring the variance of a normal distribution, $\sigma_{0}=1$ and $\sigma_{A}$ was varied over the set $\{1.0,1.1,1.2,1.3,1.4,1.5,1.6,1.7,1.8,1.9,2.0\}$. The mean (the nuisance parameter in this case) was $\mu=0$. Table 2.2 presents the simulated power and average stopping time(AVST) with its standard deviation(SD).

Tables 2.1 and 2.2 present three different situations $n_{0}=100$ and $\tau=51$, $n_{0}=150$ and $\tau=76, n_{0}=200$ and $\tau=101$. These simulations suggest that the test procedure is consistent against fixed alternatives, a fact justified by Theorem 2.2. That is, as the truncation point $n_{0}$ grows to infinity, the power of the test goes to unity for any fixed alternative.

Table 2.1: Test for monitoring the mean $\mu$ of a normally distributed population with $\mu_{0}=0$ and $\sigma=1$, and various $\mu_{A}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) and its standard deviation(SD). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.

|  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\mu_{A}$ | POWER | AVST | SD |
| 100 | 51 | 0.00 | 0.039 | 99.24 | 0.53 |
|  |  | 0.10 | 0.095 | 98.44 | 0.85 |
|  |  | 0.20 | 0.219 | 96.81 | 1.26 |
|  |  | 0.30 | 0.421 | 93.96 | 1.61 |
|  |  | 0.40 | 0.641 | 90.13 | 1.84 |
|  |  | 0.50 | 0.822 | 85.84 | 1.92 |
|  |  | 0.60 | 0.944 | 81.61 | 1.82 |
|  |  | 0.70 | 0.989 | 77.95 | 1.61 |
|  |  | 0.80 | 0.998 | 75.00 | 1.37 |
|  |  | 0.90 | 1.000 | 72.71 | 1.25 |
|  | 1.00 | 1.000 | 70.87 | 1.09 |  |
| 150 | 76 | 0.00 | 0.044 | 148.85 | 1.25 |
|  |  | 0.10 | 0.136 | 146.74 | 2.22 |
|  |  | 0.20 | 0.312 | 142.73 | 2.88 |
|  |  | 0.30 | 0.588 | 136.27 | 3.44 |
|  |  | 0.40 | 0.833 | 127.99 | 3.63 |
|  |  | 0.50 | 0.957 | 119.93 | 3.31 |
|  |  | 0.60 | 0.994 | 113.37 | 2.80 |
|  |  | 0.70 | 1.000 | 108.45 | 2.36 |
|  |  | 0.80 | 1.000 | 104.79 | 1.98 |
|  |  | 0.90 | 1.000 | 101.95 | 1.73 |
|  |  | 1.00 | 1.000 | 99.68 | 1.52 |
| 200 | 101 | 0.00 | 0.041 | 198.30 | 1.31 |
|  |  | 0.10 | 0.156 | 194.96 | 2.76 |
|  |  | 0.20 | 0.396 | 187.68 | 4.68 |
|  | 0.30 | 0.718 | 175.83 | 5.59 |  |
|  | 0.40 | 0.928 | 162.48 | 5.35 |  |
|  | 0.50 | 0.990 | 151.44 | 4.14 |  |
|  | 0.60 | 0.999 | 143.56 | 3.26 |  |
|  | 0.70 | 1.000 | 137.90 | 2.66 |  |
|  | 0.80 | 1.000 | 133.66 | 2.26 |  |
|  | 0.90 | 1.000 | 130.38 | 1.99 |  |
|  | 1.00 | 1.000 | 127.80 | 1.82 |  |

Table 2.2: Test for monitoring variance $\sigma^{2}$ of a normally distributed population with $\mu=0$ and $\sigma_{0}=1$, and various $\sigma_{A}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) and standard deviation(SD) of AVST. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$

|  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\sigma_{A}$ | POWER | AVST | SD |
| 100 | 51 | 1.00 | 0.043 | 98.86 | 1.20 |
|  |  | 1.10 | 0.180 | 96.65 | 1.82 |
|  |  | 1.20 | 0.437 | 91.63 | 2.27 |
|  |  | 1.30 | 0.720 | 84.98 | 2.62 |
|  |  | 1.40 | 0.885 | 78.36 | 2.52 |
|  |  | 1.50 | 0.969 | 73.20 | 2.06 |
|  |  | 1.60 | 0.991 | 69.22 | 1.65 |
|  |  | 1.70 | 0.998 | 66.26 | 1.32 |
|  |  | 1.80 | 1.000 | 64.00 | 1.12 |
|  |  | 1.90 | 1.000 | 62.25 | 1.04 |
|  |  | 2.00 | 1.000 | 60.85 | 0.97 |
| 150 | 76 | 1.00 | 0.048 | 148.11 | 3.36 |
|  |  | 1.10 | 0.237 | 143.51 | 3.76 |
|  |  | 1.20 | 0.577 | 133.21 | 4.57 |
|  |  | 1.30 | 0.852 | 120.79 | 4.62 |
|  |  | 1.40 | 0.965 | 110.43 | 4.12 |
|  | 1.50 | 0.993 | 103.03 | 3.34 |  |
|  |  | 1.60 | 0.999 | 98.00 | 2.73 |
|  |  | 1.70 | 1.000 | 94.34 | 2.41 |
|  | 1.80 | 1.000 | 91.51 | 2.17 |  |
|  |  | 1.90 | 1.000 | 89.44 | 1.95 |
|  |  | 2.00 | 1.000 | 87.74 | 1.77 |
| 200 | 101 | 1.00 | 0.044 | 197.89 | 2.33 |
|  |  | 1.10 | 0.275 | 190.14 | 4.34 |
|  | 1.20 | 0.694 | 172.98 | 6.29 |  |
|  | 1.30 | 0.929 | 153.87 | 6.26 |  |
|  | 1.40 | 0.985 | 140.73 | 5.05 |  |
|  | 1.50 | 0.999 | 131.80 | 4.05 |  |
|  | 1.60 | 1.000 | 125.79 | 3.32 |  |
|  | 1.70 | 1.000 | 121.55 | 2.84 |  |
|  | 1.80 | 1.000 | 118.46 | 2.56 |  |
|  | 1.90 | 1.000 | 116.06 | 2.18 |  |
|  | 2.00 | 1.000 | 114.16 | 1.98 |  |

### 2.4.2 The case of the nested random effects model

In the case of the nested random effects model we first analyzed the Yashchin's (1995) published data (not presented in this thesis) on $n_{0}=30$ lots of chips manufactured at IBM. Each lot has two wafers, so $R=2$, and from each wafer $N=4$ chips were chosen randomly for measuring. The target value for mean is $\mu_{0}=1000 \AA$; the historically acceptable variance components give $\sigma_{0}^{2}=400 \AA$, $\sigma_{0 u v}^{2}=900 \AA, \sigma_{0 b}^{2}=3,600 \AA$, respectively. We tested all four parameters for change individually and the tests for $\mu$ and for $\sigma_{w}^{2}$ were significant at $\alpha=0.05$. When we monitor all parameters simultaneously the test is not significant at $\alpha=0.05$. The reason for different conclusion from Yashchin (1995) is that his procedure was designed for a tolerance of $80 \AA$ from the target whereas we can detect any size of change.

In the Tables 2.3-2.10 we present the simulated power (Power) and the average stopping time (AVST) of the CUSUM-type sequential test (2.14). The simulations were performed with level of significance $\alpha=0.05$ on a model with $R=2$ and $N=4$. The first part of each of the tables 2.3-2.10 demonstrates the power of the test when change was at $\tau=1$ and $n_{0}=30$, that is all observations come from the alternative distribution. The second part of each table demonstrates the power of the test when change was at $\tau=31$ and $n_{0}=60$, that is, the first 30 observations come from the null distribution and the next 30 observations come from the alternative distribution. The incontrol parameters were chosen to be $\mu=0, \sigma=0.2, \sigma_{w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{b}=0.6$ as these give the same proportion as in the analyzed data of Yashchin(1995).

In Tables 2.3 to 2.6 we monitor only one parameter $(d=1)$ and the critical value is $C(0.05)=2.24$. In tables $2.7,2.8$, and 2.9 we monitor three parameters simultaneously $(d=3)$ and the test statistic has three independent components. In this case, in order to obtain an overall level of significance of $\alpha=0.05$ we monitor each component of the test statistic with a level of
significance of

$$
\alpha^{*}=1-(1-\alpha)^{1 / d}=1-(1-0.05)^{1 / 3}=0.0169,
$$

(see Remark 2.2) and the critical value is $C\left(\alpha^{*}=0.0169\right)=2.632$. Similarly, in table 2.10 we monitor four parameters simultaneously $(d=4)$ and we monitor each component of the test statistic with a level of significance of

$$
\alpha^{*}=1-(1-\alpha)^{1 / d}=1-(1-0.05)^{1 / 4}=0.0127
$$

The critical value is now $C\left(o^{*}=0.0127\right)=2.727$.
For comparison, in table 2.3 the entries in the brackets are the results of Atenafu and Gombay (2004) obtained by using the generalized likelihood ratio. We can see that the CUSUM-type sequential test has a higher power in the more realistic case where the first 30 observations come from the null hypothesis. This can be explained by the fact that the first 30 observation which come from the null hypothesis decrease the power of the test based on the generalized likelihood ratio but they do not affect in the same measure the power of the CUSUM-type test.

Table 2.3: Test for monitoring mean $\mu$ of a nested random effect model with $\mu_{0}=0, \sigma=0.2, \sigma_{w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{b}=0.6$, and various $\mu_{4}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=$ $0.05, d=1$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.

|  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\mu_{A}$ | POWER | AVST |
| 30 | 1 | 0.0 | $0.034(.049)$ | $29.88(29.7)$ |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.130 | 29.38 |
|  |  | 0.2 | $0.351(.362)$ | $28.07(27.4)$ |
|  |  | 0.3 | 0.660 | 25.66 |
|  |  | 0.4 | $0.885(.887)$ | $22.82(21.0)$ |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.980 | 20.26 |
|  |  | 0.6 | $0.999(.999)$ | $18.37(15.6)$ |
|  |  | 0.7 | 1.000 | 17.05 |
|  |  | 0.8 | $1.000(1.00)$ | $16.15(12.7)$ |
|  |  | 1.0 | $1.000(1.00)$ | $15.01(11.1)$ |
| 60 | 31 | 0.0 | $0.040(.05)$ | $59.57(59.3)$ |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.114 | 58.94 |
|  |  | 0.2 | $0.273(.18)$ | $57.71(58.4)$ |
|  |  | 0.3 | 0.524 | 55.66 |
|  |  | 0.4 | $0.777(.55)$ | $52.81(55.2)$ |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.936 | 50.01 |
|  |  | 0.6 | $0.989(.87)$ | $47.58(51.1)$ |
|  | 0.7 | 0.999 | 45.75 |  |
|  |  | 0.8 | $1.000(.98)$ | $44.35(47.0)$ |
|  |  | 1.0 | $1.000(1.0)$ | $42.44(44.6)$ |

Table 2.4: Test for monitoring variance component $\sigma^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma_{0}=0.2, \sigma_{u}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{b}=0.6$, and various $\sigma_{A}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=1$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.

|  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\sigma_{A}$ | POWER | AVST |
| 30 | 1 | 0.20 | 0.037 | 29.78 |
|  |  | 0.22 | 0.500 | 25.76 |
|  |  | 0.25 | 0.986 | 14.68 |
|  |  | 0.27 | 0.999 | 10.69 |
|  |  | 0.30 | 1.000 | 7.61 |
| 60 | 31 | 0.20 | 0.034 | 59.55 |
|  |  | 0.22 | 0.378 | 56.45 |
|  |  | 0.25 | 0.962 | 46.11 |
|  |  | 0.27 | 0.998 | 41.72 |
|  |  | 0.30 | 1.000 | 38.26 |

Table 2.5: Test for monitoring variance component $\sigma_{w}^{2}$, of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma=0.2, \sigma_{0 w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{b}=0.6$, and various $\sigma_{A w}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=1$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.

|  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\sigma_{A W}$ | POWER | AVST |
| 30 | 1 | 0.3 | 0.053 | 29.54 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.674 | 21.77 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.974 | 12.90 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.999 | 8.54 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 1.000 | 6.27 |
| 60 | 31 | 0.3 | 0.049 | 59.20 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.569 | 53.05 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.945 | 44.19 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.997 | 39.30 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 1.000 | 36.75 |

Table 2.6: Test for monitoring variance component $\sigma_{b}^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma=0.2, \sigma_{w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{0 b}=0.6$, and various $\sigma_{A b}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=1$, and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.

|  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\sigma_{A b}$ | POWER | AVST |
| 30 | 1 | 0.6 | 0.041 | 29.67 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.263 | 27.67 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 0.608 | 23.34 |
|  |  | 1.0 | 0.948 | 15.11 |
|  |  | 1.2 | 0.997 | 10.97 |
| 60 | 31 | 0.6 | 0.046 | 59.24 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.195 | 57.66 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 0.496 | 54.36 |
|  |  | 1.0 | 0.919 | 45.59 |
|  |  | 1.2 | 0.994 | 40.27 |

Table 2.7: Test for simultaneously monitoring all variance components $\sigma^{2}, \sigma_{w}^{2}$; and $\sigma_{b}^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma_{0}=0.2, \sigma_{0 w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{06}=0.6$. Only $\sigma$ is changing. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=3$ and $C(a)=2.632$.

|  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\sigma_{\mathcal{A}}$ | POWER | AVST |
| 30 | 1 | 0.20 | 0.055 | 29.66 |
|  |  | 0.22 | 0.420 | 26.80 |
|  |  | 0.25 | 0.975 | 15.76 |
|  |  | 0.27 | 0.999 | 11.17 |
|  |  | 0.30 | 1.000 | 7.60 |
| 60 | 31 | 0.20 | 0.054 | 59.30 |
|  |  | 0.22 | 0.290 | 57.47 |
|  |  | 0.25 | 0.933 | 47.76 |
|  |  | 0.27 | 0.996 | 42.68 |
|  |  | 0.30 | 1.000 | 38.59 |

Table 2.8: Test for simultaneously monitoring all variance components $\sigma^{2}, \sigma_{w}^{2}$, and $\sigma_{b}^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma_{0}=0.2, \sigma_{0 u}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{0 b}=0.6$. Only $\sigma_{w}$ is changing. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=3$ and $C(\alpha)=$ 2.632 .

| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\sigma_{\text {tu }}$ | POWER | AVST |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 30 | 1 | 0.3 | 0.055 | 29.66 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.598 | 23.61 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.958 | 14.52 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.997 | 9.59 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 1.000 | 7.00 |
| 60 | 31 | 0.3 | 0.054 | 59.30 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.467 | 53.03 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.909 | 46.28 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.995 | 40.70 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 1.000 | 37.73 |

Table 2.9: Test for simultaneously monitoring all variance components $\sigma^{2}, \sigma_{w}^{2}$, and $\sigma_{b}^{2}$ of a nested random effects model with $\mu=0, \sigma_{0}=0.2, \sigma_{0 w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{0 b}=0.6$. Only $\sigma_{b}$ is changing. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=3$ and $C(\alpha)=2.632$.

|  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\sigma_{A b}$ | POWER | AVST |
| 30 | 1 | 0.6 | 0.055 | 29.66 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.205 | 28.43 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 0.525 | 24.87 |
|  |  | 0.9 | 0.793 | 20.25 |
|  |  | 1.0 | 0.929 | 16.24 |
| 60 | 31 | 0.6 | 0.054 | 59.30 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.150 | 58.36 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 0.405 | 55.85 |
|  |  | 0.9 | 0.700 | 51.75 |
|  |  | 1.0 | 0.884 | 47.51 |

Table 2.10: Test for simultaneously monitoring all four parameters of a nested random effects model with $\mu_{0}=0, \sigma_{0}=0.2, \sigma_{0 w}=0.3$, and $\sigma_{0 b}=0.6$. Only the mean is changing. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05, d=4$ and $C(\alpha)=2.727$.

| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\mu_{A}$ | POWER | AVST |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 30 | 1 | 0.0 | 0.056 | 29.64 |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.104 | 29.43 |
|  |  | 0.2 | 0.257 | 28.45 |
|  |  | 0.3 | 0.540 | 26.29 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.816 | 22.92 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.962 | 19.33 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.995 | 16.29 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 1.000 | 13.88 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 1.000 | 11.96 |
| 60 | 31 | 0.0 | 0.057 | 59.27 |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.091 | 59.05 |
|  |  | 0.2 | 0.185 | 58.38 |
|  |  | 0.3 | 0.380 | 56.86 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.648 | 54.41 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.871 | 51.23 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.971 | 48.11 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.996 | 45.45 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 1.000 | 43.22 |

### 2.5 Consistency of the test

In this section we will derive the asymptotic distribution of the test statistic (2.14) under the alternative hypothesis, $H_{A}$. To simplify discussion we assume that the observations come from the exponential family of distributions (Sertling (1980)), that is, the canonical form of the log-likelihood is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log f(y ; \theta, \eta)=T_{1}(y) \theta^{t}+T_{2}(y) \eta^{t}+S(y)-A(\theta, \eta) \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $T_{1}(\cdot)$ and $T_{2}(\cdot)$ are vector valued functions of the data, $S(\cdot)$ is a real valued function of the data and $A(\theta, \eta)$ is a function of the parameters only. The superscript $t$ denotes a vector or matrix transpose.

The following regularity conditions will be needed for the results of this section

C9. Vectors $\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ and $\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ exist, are continuous and have unique inverses that are Lipschitz continuous of order one in each argument.

C10. Matrix $\nabla_{\xi^{2}}^{2} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ exists, is positive definite and Lipschitz continuous of order one in each argument.

C11. $\frac{\partial^{3}}{\partial \xi_{i} \partial \xi_{j} \partial \xi_{k}} A(\xi), 1 \leq i, j, k \leq d+p$, exist and are bounded in a neighborhood of $\xi$.

C12. $E_{\xi}\left\|T_{i}(Y)\right\|^{2+\delta}<\infty$, for $i=1,2$, and some $\delta>0$.
The following Theorem states that, under $H_{A}$, after the change, the score vector will drift away from a process with mean zero. In all our examples the drift is proportional to the number of observations after change. Here $\theta_{A}$ and $\eta^{*}$ are the true values of $\theta$ and $\eta$ respectively, after change.

Theorem 2.2 Under $H_{A}$, if C9-C12 are satisfied in an open neighborhood of the interval comecting $\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ and $\left(\theta_{A}, \eta^{*}\right)$, then for $\tau$ fixed, and any $k \geq \tau$, as $k \longrightarrow \infty$,

$$
\begin{align*}
V_{k}= & \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)-E T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)\right]-\left[T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)-E T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)\right] I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right) I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)\right\} \\
& +k d_{\tau k}+O(\log \log k) \tag{2.16}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\eta_{\tau k}$ is the solution of equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)=\frac{\tau-1}{k} E T_{2}\left(Y_{1}\right)+\frac{(k-\tau+1)}{k} E T_{2}\left(Y_{\tau}\right) \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the drift component $d_{\tau k}$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
d_{\tau k}=\frac{\tau-1}{k} \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)+\frac{(k-\tau+1)}{k} \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{A}, \eta^{*}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right) . \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Let $\eta_{T k}$ be the solution of the non-random equation (2.17). First we will prove that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\underset{k \rightarrow \infty}{\limsup }\left\|\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta_{\tau k}\right\|=O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \text { a.s. } \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)-\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{\tau-1}\left[T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)-E T_{2}\left(Y_{1}\right)\right] \\
& +\frac{k-\tau+1}{k} \frac{1}{k-\tau+1} \sum_{i=\tau}^{k}\left[T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)-E T_{2}\left(Y_{\tau}\right)\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

and by the LIL we have

$$
\limsup _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left\|\frac{1}{k-\tau+1} \sum_{i=\tau}^{k}\left[T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)-E T_{2}\left(Y_{\tau}\right)\right]\right\|=O\left(\sqrt{\frac{\log \log (k-\tau+1)}{(k-\tau+1)}}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

Then, from the last two relations we obtain

$$
\limsup _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left\|\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)-\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)\right\|=O\left(\sqrt{\frac{\log \log k}{k}}\right) \text { a.s. }
$$

By C $9, \nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0} ; \cdot\right)$ has a unique inverse which is Lipschitz continuous of order one so from the above relation (2.19) follows immediately. We can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
V_{k}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)= & \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\theta} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) \\
= & \sum_{i=1}^{\tau-1}\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)\right]+\sum_{i=\tau}^{k}\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)\right] \\
= & \sum_{i=1}^{\tau-1}\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right]+\sum_{i=\tau}^{k}\left[T_{l}\left(Y_{i}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{A}, \eta^{*}\right)\right] \\
& +(\tau-1) \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)+(k-\tau+1) \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{A}, \eta^{*}\right)-k \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

which can be written as

$$
\begin{align*}
V_{k}= & \sum_{i=1}^{\tau-1}\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right]+\sum_{i=\tau}^{k}\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}^{*}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{A}, \eta^{*}\right)\right] \\
& +(\tau-1) \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)+(k-\tau+1) \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{A}, \eta^{*}\right)-k \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right) \\
& +k\left[\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)\right] . \tag{2.20}
\end{align*}
$$

By C10, C11 and (2.19) the last term can be written as

$$
\begin{align*}
\nabla_{0} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) & =\left(\eta_{\tau k}-\hat{\eta}_{k}\right) \nabla_{\theta \eta}^{2} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)+O\left(\left\|\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta_{\tau k}\right\|^{2}\right) \\
& =\left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta_{\tau k}\right) I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)+O\left(k^{-1} \log \log k\right) \quad \text { a.s. } \tag{2.21}
\end{align*}
$$

In order to obtain an expression for $\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta_{T k}$ we use the following three-term Taylor expansion

$$
\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)-\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{T k}\right)=\left(\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta_{T k}\right) \nabla_{\eta^{2}}^{2} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)+O\left(k^{-1} \log \log k\right),
$$

and by the definition of $\hat{\eta}_{k}$ we have

$$
\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)=\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)
$$

Now by using C11 we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\eta}_{k}-\eta_{\tau k}=-\left\{\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)-\nabla_{11} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)\right\} I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)+O\left(\sqrt{\frac{\log \log k}{k}}\right) . \tag{2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (2.21) and (2.22) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)= & -\left\{\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)-\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{T k}\right)\right\} \\
& \times I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right) I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)+O\left(k^{-1} \log \log k\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and combine this result with (2.20) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
V_{k}= & \sum_{i=1}^{\tau-1}\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)\right]+\sum_{i=\tau}^{k}\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{A}, \eta \eta^{*}\right)\right] \\
& +\left[(\tau-1) \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)+(k-\tau+1) \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{A}, \eta^{*}\right)-k \nabla_{0} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)\right] \\
& -\left\{\sum_{i=1}^{k} T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)-k \nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)\right\} I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right) I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)+O(\log \log k)
\end{aligned}
$$

By using (2.17) and (2.18) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
V_{k}= & \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}^{\prime}\right)-E T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)\right]-\left[T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)-E T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)\right] I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right) I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)\right\} \\
& +k l_{\tau k}+O(\log \log k)
\end{aligned}
$$

If we denote

$$
Z_{i}=\left[T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)-E T_{1}\left(Y_{i}\right)\right]-\left[T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)-E T_{2}\left(Y_{i}\right)\right] I_{22}^{-1}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right) I_{21}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}\right)
$$

then we can write

$$
V_{k}=\sum_{i=1}^{k} Z_{i}+k d_{T k}+O(\log \log k)
$$

$Z_{i}$ are independent random vectors with mean zero and finite covariance structure.

Remark 2.5 The test (2.14) is based on $V_{k, j}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k, j}\right)$. By Theorem 2.5.1 $V_{k, j}$ can be represented as

$$
V_{k, j}=\sum_{i=j}^{k} Z_{i}+(k-j+1) d_{\tau k}(j)+O(\log \log k)
$$

where the drift. $d_{\tau k}(j)$ is defined as follows
(i) if $\tau \leq j<k$, and $\eta_{1 k}$ is the solution of the non-random equation $\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)=E T_{2}\left(Y_{\tau}\right)$, then

$$
d_{\tau k}(j)=\nabla_{0} A\left(\theta_{A}, \eta^{*}\right)-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{1 k}\right) .
$$

(ii) if $j<\tau \leq k$, and $\eta_{\tau k}(j)$ is the solution of the non-random equation

$$
\nabla_{\eta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)=\frac{\tau-j}{k-j+1} E T_{2}\left(Y_{1}\right)+\frac{k-\tau+1}{k-j+1} E T_{2}\left(Y_{\tau}^{*}\right)
$$

then

$$
d_{\tau k}(j)=\frac{(\tau-j) \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)+(k-\tau+1) \nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{A}, \eta^{*}\right)}{(k-j+1)}-\nabla_{\theta} A\left(\theta_{0}, \eta_{\tau k}(j)\right) .
$$

Example 2.1 We will compute now the drift in the test (2.14) in the case of monitoring the mean of a normal distribution (section 2.3.1). The test is based on

$$
T_{k}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \frac{\sum_{i=j}^{k} Y_{i}}{\sqrt{\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i}^{2}}}
$$

It can be easily seen that under the alternative $H_{A}, \sigma_{\tau k}^{2}=\sigma^{2}+\frac{k-\tau+1}{k} \mu_{A}^{2}$ and the drift in $V_{k, j}$ is

$$
\begin{cases}d_{\tau k}(j)=(k-j+1) \mu_{A}, & \text { if } \tau \leq j \leq k \\ d_{\tau k}(j)=(k-\tau+1) \mu_{A}, & \text { if } 2 \leq j \leq \tau \leq k\end{cases}
$$

Then the maximum drift is obtained for any $j \leq \tau$ and for $j=\tau$ the drift in the test statistic is

$$
D_{\tau k}=\frac{(k-\tau+1) \mu_{A}}{\sqrt{n_{0}\left(\sigma^{2}+\frac{(k-\tau+1)}{k} \mu_{A}^{2}\right)}} .
$$

Example 2.2 In the case of monitoring the variance of a normal distribution the test is based on (section 2.3.1)

$$
T_{k}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{1 \leq j<k} \sum_{i=j}^{k} \frac{\left(Y_{i}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}-\hat{\mu}_{k-j}^{2}\right)}{\sigma_{0}^{2} \sqrt{2}} .
$$

In this case $\mu_{\tau k}=\mu_{1 k}=\mu$ and under the alternative, $H_{A}$, the drift in $V_{k, j}$ is

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
d_{\tau k}(j)=(k-j+1)\left(\sigma_{A}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right), \text { if } \tau \leq j \leq k \\
d_{\tau k}(j)=(k-\tau+1)\left(\sigma_{A}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right), \text { if } 2 \leq j \leq \tau \leq k
\end{array}\right.
$$

Then the maximum drift is obtained for any $j \leq \tau$, and for $j=\tau$ the drift in the test statistic is

$$
D_{\tau k}=\frac{(k-\tau+1)\left(\sigma_{A}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right)}{\sqrt{2 n_{0} \sigma_{0}^{2}}} .
$$

In the same way one can compute the drift when monitoring the parameters of a nested random effects.

## Chapter 3

## Monitoring Parameter Change in AR(p) Models

### 3.1 Preliminaries

Traditional Statistical Process Control (SPC) techniques are based on the assumption that process data are independent. As Wetherill (1977) has pointed out, observations from modern industrial processes are often autocorrelated and the process itself can behave like an autoregressive process. Such behavior must be taken into account when setting up monitoring procedures. So, for practical purposes the methods available for independent observations needed to be extended to the case of non-independent observations.

Johnson and Bagshaw (1975) obtained the limit processes for partial sums of observations from ARMA processes and explored the effect of ARMA noise on CUSUM statistics. Bagshaw and Johnson (1975) examined the effect of ARMA noise on the rum length distribution for CUSUMs. Their method is based on the first passage distribution of a Wiener process moving between
reflecting and absorbing barriers, adjusting the variance parameter to allow for serial correlation, but their approximations can be inadequate in many cases (c.f., Yashchin 1993). Tang and MacNeill (1993) contains theoretical results and simulations on the effect of correlation.

Starting with Brown et al. (1975), residuals became one of the most important tools in change-point analysis for testing the constancy of parameters of a process over time. Kulperger (1985), Bai (1993), and Horváth (1993) investigated various asymptotic properties of sums of residuals. Boldin (1982) and Bai (1994b) obtained the weak convergence of empirical processes of residuals in stationary ARMA processes. Alwan and Roberts (1988) and Montgomery and Friedman (1989) discuss an alternative approach which consists of fitting a time series model to the $\left\{Y_{i}\right\}$ series when it is autocorrelated and then applying a control chart to the series of one-step-ahead prediction erross. In the above papers various tests for detecting a change in the parameters of a process have been suggested. Our simulations have been showed that a test based on residuals can be powerful in detecting a change in the mean of the process but is not too sensitive when we test for change in the coefficients of the process.

Several extensions of CUSUM and GLR schemes to handle autocorrelated observations have appeared. In principle Page's likelihood ratio CUSUM scheme (Page 1955) can be easily extended to non-independent observations, simply by replacing $f\left(Y_{i}\right)$ by $f\left(Y_{i} \mid Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{i-1}\right)$. However, according to Basseville and Nikiforov (1993), practical implementation of the GLR algorithm is not always possible because of computational difficulties.

Likelihood ratio methodology for testing for changes in the parameters of
an autoregressive process was developed by Picard (1985), and later by Davis et al. (1995), and Csörgő and Horváth (1997).

As an altemative to likelihood ratio tests, a Bayes-type method was introduced by Chernoff and Zacks (1964) who applied it to the problem of one-sided changes at unknown times in the mean of a sequence of independent normal random variables. Lurie and Neerchal (1999) extended this method to the problem of testing for a change in autoregressive parameters for a general stationary AR process. In the presence of nuisance parameters the Bayes-type test statistics can be expressed in terms of certain Brownian integrals. Their simulation studies have shown that neither method is powerful.

In this chapter we focus on the change-point problems occurring in autocorrelated data. Truncated CUSUM-type sequential tests are proposed to detect an abrupt change in the parameters of a sequence of autocorrelated observations. The tests are based on large sample approximations of the components of efficient score vector. At the end of this chapter the empirical power of the proposed tests is analyzed in a simulation study.

To set up the problem let $Y_{-p+1}, Y_{-p+2}, \ldots, Y_{0}, Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots$, be consecutive observations from the model

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{i}-\mu=\phi_{1}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\ldots+\phi_{p}\left(Y_{i-p}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}, \quad i \geq-p+1, \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mu, \phi_{j}, j=1, \ldots, p$, are constants and $\left\{\varepsilon_{i}\right\}$ is a sequence of random variables.

The assumptions on innovations $\varepsilon_{i}$ vary in the literature. In the most simple case they are assumed to satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{\varepsilon_{i}\right\} \text { is an i.i.d. } N\left(0, \sigma^{2}\right) \text { sequence . } \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

For simplicity of exposition we shall work under this condition on the $\left\{\varepsilon_{i}\right\}$ sequence, but note that this is not a crucial assumption and our results will be valid if $\left\{\varepsilon_{i}\right\}$ were a martingale difference sequence, or some other sequence as long as the results of Eberlein (1986) are valid for the strong approximation of the corresponding sequence of partial sums by a Brownian motions. In the more general case the likelihood function will be replaced by a quasi-likelihood, and some moment conditions are specified.

We shall assume that the process is stationary, that is, the characteristic polynomial $\phi(z)=1-\phi_{1} z-\ldots-\phi_{p} z^{p}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(z) \neq 0 \text { for all }|z| \leq 1, \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

(c.f. Brockwell and Davis 1991).

The stochastic behavior of the the sequence is determined by the vector of parameters ( $\mu, \sigma^{2}, \phi_{1}, \ldots, \phi_{p}$ ). All the components of this vector may be of interest or we can deal with nuisance parameters. Here we consider the problem of detecting change in parameter $\theta$ from the initially given $\theta_{0}$ value, where $\theta$ can be $\phi=\left(\phi_{1}, \ldots, \phi_{p}\right)$, or $\sigma^{2}$, or $\mu$, or ( $\mu, \sigma^{2}$ ), with the other parameters unknown, that is, nuisance parameters.

We denote $\phi=\left(\phi_{1}, \ldots, \phi_{p}\right)^{t}$ the $p \times 1$ vector of the coefficients and assume that the covariance matrix

$$
\Gamma=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
c_{0} & c_{1} & \ldots & c_{p-1}  \tag{3.4}\\
c_{1} & c_{0} & \ldots & c_{p-2} \\
\vdots & \vdots & & \vdots \\
c_{p-1} & c_{p-2} & \ldots & c_{0}
\end{array}\right)
$$

is invertible, where $c_{k}=\operatorname{Cov}\left(Y_{i}, Y_{i+k}\right)$. Let

$$
\boldsymbol{X}_{k}=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
Y_{0}-\mu & Y_{-1}-\mu & \ldots & Y_{-p+1}-\mu \\
Y_{1}-\mu & Y_{0}-\mu & \ldots & Y_{-p+2}-\mu \\
\vdots & \vdots & & \vdots \\
Y_{k-1}-\mu & Y_{k-2}-\mu & \ldots & Y_{k-p}-\mu
\end{array}\right)
$$

be the design matrix at stage $k$. It is well known that $(1 / k) X_{k}^{t} X_{k} \xrightarrow{\text { a.s. }} \Gamma$, hence it is invertible for k large enough.

We assume that the observations $Y_{-p+1}, Y_{-p+2}, \ldots, Y_{0}, Y_{1}, \ldots$, come from the model (3.1). Under the assumption (3.2), for each $k \geq 2$, the joint distribution function of $\left(Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{k}\right)$ conditionally on $Y_{-p+1}, Y_{-p+2}, \ldots, Y_{0}$ is

$$
\begin{align*}
f\left(Y_{1}, \ldots, Y_{k}\right) & =\prod_{i=1}^{k} f\left(Y_{i} \mid Y_{i-1}, \ldots, Y_{i-p}\right) \\
& =\left(2 \pi \sigma^{2}\right)^{-\frac{k}{2}} \exp \left\{-\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2}\right\} \tag{3.5}
\end{align*}
$$

and the log-likelihood function is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
l_{k}\left(\mu, \sigma^{2}, \phi_{1}, \ldots, \phi_{p}\right)= & -\frac{k}{2} \log (2 \pi)-\frac{k}{2} \log \left(\sigma^{2}\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2} . \tag{3.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the relationship $\varepsilon_{i}=\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)$, the components of
the efficient score vector are

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial l_{k}}{\partial \mu} & =\frac{\left(1-\phi_{1}-\ldots-\phi_{p}\right)}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& =\frac{\left(1-\phi_{1}-\ldots-\phi_{p}\right)}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i} .  \tag{3.7}\\
\frac{\partial l_{k}}{\partial \sigma^{2}} & =-\frac{k}{2 \sigma^{2}}+\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{4}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2} \\
& =\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{4}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(\varepsilon_{i}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right) .  \tag{3.8}\\
\frac{\partial l_{k}}{\partial \phi_{s}} & =\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\mu\right)\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& =\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\mu\right) \varepsilon_{i}, \text { for all } s=1, \ldots, p . \tag{3.9}
\end{align*}
$$

The $(p+2) \times(p+2)$ information matrix is given by

$$
I\left(\mu, \sigma^{2}, \phi_{1}, \ldots, \phi_{p}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\frac{\left(1-\phi_{1}-\ldots-\phi_{p}\right)^{2}}{\sigma^{2}} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \frac{1}{2 \sigma^{4}} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \Gamma
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}$ is the covariance matrix given in (3.4).

The following estimators will be used

$$
\begin{gather*}
\hat{\mu}_{k}=\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i}  \tag{3.10}\\
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}=\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2}, \tag{3.11}
\end{gather*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\phi}_{k}=\left(\mathbf{X}_{k}^{t} \mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{k}}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{X}_{k}^{t} \mathbf{Z}_{k}, \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{Z}_{k}=\left(Y_{1}-\mu, \ldots, Y_{k}-\mu\right)^{t}$.

We are testing whether parameter $\theta=\theta_{0}$ changes along the sequence, so only the muisance parameters have to be estimated by their restricted m.l.e's, where value $\theta_{0}$ is used in the formulas. The following lemmas on the maximum likelihood estimators give rates that allow the strong approximation of the statistics process by a Brownian motion. Invariance principles, strong approximations found in the literature (Phillips and Solo (1992), Konev and Pergamenshchikov (1997), and references therein) are not sufficient for our purposes, so although the limits are not new, the improved rates are. As our methods are based on large sample approximations, for large $k, Y_{-p+1}, Y_{-p+2}, \ldots, Y_{0}$, can be replaced by any random variable or constant without changing the limit.

Lemma 3.1 Under the hypothesis $\phi=\phi_{0}$ or $\sigma^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}$ and conditions (3.2) and (3.3)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\hat{\mu}_{k}-\mu\right|=O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. } \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The m.l.e. of $\mu$ is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\bar{\mu}_{k} & =\frac{1}{k\left(1-\phi_{01}-\ldots-\phi_{0 p}\right)} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i}-\phi_{01} Y_{i-1}-\ldots-\phi_{0 p} Y_{i-p}\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{k\left(1-\phi_{01}-\ldots-\phi_{0 p}\right)} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\phi_{01}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)-\ldots-\phi_{0 p}\left(Y_{i-p}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& +\frac{k \mu}{k\left(1-\phi_{01}-\ldots-\phi_{0 p}\right)}\left(1-\phi_{01}-\ldots-\phi_{0 p}\right) \\
& =\mu+\frac{1}{\left(1-\phi_{01}-\ldots-\phi_{0 p}\right)} \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the strong invariance principles for the imnovation sequence, under our conditions, we get $k^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i} \stackrel{\text { a.s. }}{=} O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right)$, and this implies

$$
\left|\bar{\mu}_{k}-\mu\right|=O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

Note that,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\bar{\mu}_{k} & =\frac{1}{k\left(1-\phi_{01}-\ldots-\phi_{0 p}\right)}\left\{\sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i}-\phi_{01} \sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i-1}^{\prime}-\ldots-\phi_{0 p} \sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i-p}\right\} \\
& =\hat{\mu}_{k}+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \text { a.s. }
\end{aligned}
$$

Now putting together the last two relationships we obtain (3.13).

Lemma 3.2 Under the hypothesis $\mu=\mu_{0}$ or $\sigma^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}$ and conditions (3.2) and (3.3)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\hat{\phi}_{k}-\phi\right\|=O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. } \tag{3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. From $\hat{\phi}_{k}=\left(\mathbf{X}_{k}^{t} \mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{k}}\right)^{-1} \mathbf{X}_{k}^{t} \mathbf{Z}_{k}$ using the description of the model in the form $\mathrm{Z}_{k}=\mathrm{X}_{k} \phi+\varepsilon$ we get $\hat{\phi}_{k}-\phi=\left(\boldsymbol{X}_{k}^{t} \boldsymbol{X}_{k}\right)^{-1} \boldsymbol{X}_{k}^{\prime} \varepsilon$. By Lemma A. 2 each component of the vector $\left(\frac{1}{k} \mathbf{X}_{k}^{t} \varepsilon\right)_{p \times 1}$ is of order $O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right)$ a.s. As $(1 / k) \mathbf{X}_{k}^{t} \mathbf{X}_{k} \xrightarrow{\text { a.s. }} \Gamma$, we have

$$
\left\|\hat{\phi}_{k}-\phi\right\|=\left\|\left(\frac{1}{k} \mathbf{X}_{k}^{t} \mathbf{X}_{\mathbf{k}}\right)^{-1}\left(\frac{1}{k} \mathbf{X}_{k}^{t} \varepsilon\right)\right\| \stackrel{a . s .}{=} O\left(\sqrt{\frac{\log \log k}{k}}\right)
$$

Using Lemma 3.1 we obtain that replacing $\mu$ by $\hat{\mu}_{k}$ (given by (3.10)) in $X_{k}^{t} \varepsilon$ the error committed is $\left(\hat{\mu}_{k}-\mu\right) \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i} \stackrel{n . s .}{=} O(\log \log k)$, which is negligible after the standardization. Similarly, it is easy to check by calculations, that $\left.(1 / k) \mathbf{X}_{k}^{t} \mathrm{X}_{k}\right|_{\mu=\tilde{\mu}_{k}} \xrightarrow{\text { a.s. }} \Gamma$.

Lemma 3.3 Under the hypothesis $\mu=\mu_{0}$ or $\boldsymbol{\phi}=\boldsymbol{\phi}_{0}$ and conditions (3.2) and (3.3)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right|=O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. } \tag{3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The m.l.e. of $\sigma^{2}$ is

$$
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}=\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\phi_{1}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)-\ldots-\phi_{p}\left(Y_{i-p}-\mu\right)\right]^{2},
$$

where either $\mu$ or $\phi$ has to be replaced by its m.l.e. Consider the first case.

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2} & =\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)+\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\left(1-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\right)\right]^{2} \\
& =\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}^{2}+\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)^{2}\left(1-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\right)^{2}+2\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\left(1-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\right) \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i} . \tag{3.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Under condition (3.2) the invariance principle holds for the first term and we have $\left|\sigma^{2}-k^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}^{2}\right| \stackrel{\text { a.s. }}{=} O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right)$. The second term is of order $O\left(k^{-1} \log \log k\right)$ by Lemma 3.1, while the invariance principle for the $\varepsilon_{i}$ sequence and Lemma 3.1 make the last term of order $O\left(k^{-1} \log \log k\right)$. Putting these together the lemma is proved in this case.

Consider now the second case. If $\phi$ is replaced by $\hat{\phi}_{k}$ the variance $\sigma^{2}$ is estimated ly

$$
\begin{align*}
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]-\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]\right\}^{2} \\
= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}^{2}-2 \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& +\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2} \tag{3.17}
\end{align*}
$$

The first term is as in (3.16) and we have $\left|\sigma^{2}-k^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}^{2}\right| \stackrel{\text { a.s. }}{=} O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right)$. For the second term

$$
\left(\hat{\phi}_{k 1}-\phi_{1}\right) \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\ldots+\left(\hat{\phi}_{k p}-\phi_{p}\right) \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left(Y_{i-p}-\mu\right),
$$

we use Lemma 3.2 and the invariance principle for each sum of the form $\sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left(Y_{i-s}-\mu\right)$, (see Lemma. A.2), and we olbtain a rate of $O\left(k^{-1} \log \log k.\right)$.

For the last term in (3.17) we apply the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality and obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2} & \leq \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[p \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)^{2}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)^{2}\right] \\
& =p \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)^{2}\left[\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)^{2}\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, as $k^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)^{2}$ converges almost surely to the diagonal element of the matrix $\Gamma$, by using Lemma 3.2 we obtain again a rate of $O\left(k^{-1} \log \log k\right)$ a.s.

### 3.2 Monitoring the mean of an $\mathrm{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ process

In this section we consider the problem of detecting a change in the mean $\mu$ of an $\operatorname{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ model. $\sigma^{2}$ and $\phi$ are nuisance parameters. The hypothesis of interest is

$$
H_{0}: \mu=\mu_{0}, \sigma^{2}, \phi \text { unknown, for all } i \geq-p+1,
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\mu=\mu_{0}, \sigma^{2}, \phi \text { unknown, for }-p+1 \leq i<\tau \\
\mu=\mu_{A}>\mu_{0}, \sigma^{2}, \phi \text { unknown, for } i \geq \tau
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\tau$ is the unknown change-point.
The test will be based on the first component of the efficient score vector given by (3.7). Under $H_{0}$ defined above, the efficient score vector is

$$
\frac{\partial l_{k}}{\partial \mu}\left(\mu_{0}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)=\frac{\left(1-\hat{\phi}_{k 1}-\ldots-\hat{\phi}_{k p}\right)}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{0}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] .
$$

For each $k \geq 2$ define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}=\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{0}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu_{0}\right) . \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the standardized efficient score vector is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{k}\left(\mu_{0}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}, \tag{3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\hat{\phi}_{k}$ is given by (3.12). In the following lemma we assume, without a loss of generality, the existence of a Brownian motion $\mathrm{H}(\cdot)$ used in the approximations.

Lemma 3.4 Under the hypothesis $H_{0}: \mu=\mu_{0}, \sigma^{2}, \phi$ unknown, and conditions (3.2) and (3.3), there exists a Brownian motion $W(\cdot)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|W_{k}\left(\mu_{0}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)-W(k)\right| \stackrel{\alpha_{0} s \cdot}{=} o\left(k^{1 / \nu}\right) \tag{3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $\nu>2$.

Proof. The standardized efficient score vector can be written as

$$
\begin{align*}
& W_{k}\left(\mu_{0}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{0}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{0}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu_{0}\right)+\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\phi_{j}-\hat{\phi}_{k j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}+\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left[\left(\phi_{j}-\hat{\phi}_{k j}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] \\
= & \frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}+\frac{\sigma-\hat{\sigma}_{k}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}+\frac{\sigma}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left[k\left(\phi_{j}-\hat{\phi}_{k j}\right) \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] \tag{3.21}
\end{align*}
$$

By the invariance principle there exists a Brownian motion $W(\cdot)$, such that

$$
\left|\frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}-W(k)\right| \stackrel{a . s .}{=} o\left(k^{1 / \nu}\right),
$$

for some $\nu>2$. Replacing $\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}}$ by $\frac{1}{\sigma}$ causes an error given by the second term of (3.21). By Lemma 3.3 and the invariance principle for the sequence $\sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}$, the second term is of order $O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \cdot O(\sqrt{k \log \log k})=$ $O(\log \log k)$ a.s. Multiplier $\frac{\sigma}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \xrightarrow{\text { a.s. }} 1$, and the sum of the error term is negligible by using Lemma 3.2 and recalling (see Lemma A.1) that the assumptions on the sequence $\left\{\varepsilon_{i}\right\}$ entails the invariance principle for $\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{0}\right)$. Hence the error term is $O(\log \log k)$ a.s.

Remark 3.1 Based on the above lemma it is easy to see that, as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
\max _{1 \leq l<k \leq n} \frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{n}} \sum_{i=l}^{k} \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i} & =\max _{1 \leq l<k \leq n} \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\left\{W_{k}\left(\mu_{0}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)-W_{l}\left(\mu_{0}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\right\} \\
& \xrightarrow{D} \sup _{0 \leq u<v \leq 1}\{W(v)-W(u)\},
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies

$$
\max _{1 \leq l<k \leq n} \frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{n}} \sum_{i=l}^{k} \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i} \xrightarrow{\mathcal{D}} \sup _{0 \leq l \leq 1}|W(t)| .
$$

Now we are able to define a truncated CUSUM-type sequential test for detecting a change in the mean $\mu_{0}$ as follows.

TEST 1. Stop and conclude that $H_{0}$ is not supported by the data at the first k when

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{\mu}(k)=\max _{1 \leq l<k} \frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{n_{0}}} \sum_{i=l}^{k} \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i} \geq C(\alpha) . \tag{3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Do not reject $H_{0}$ if it is not rejected by $k=n_{0}$.
Here $n_{0}$ is the truncation point, $\alpha$ is the level of significance and $\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}$ is the least square estimator of $\sigma^{2}$ given in (3.9)(with $\mu$ replaced by $\mu_{0}$ ). The critical value $C(\alpha)$ is taken from the well known distribution of $\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1}|W(t)|$.

### 3.3 Monitoring the variance of an $\operatorname{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ process

In this section we consider the problem of detecting a change in the variance $\sigma^{2}$, while the mean $\mu$ and $\phi$ are nuisance parameters. We test

$$
H_{0}: \sigma^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}, \mu \phi \text { unknown, for all } i \geq-p+1
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\sigma^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}, \mu, \phi \text { unknown, for }-p+1 \leq i<\tau \\
\sigma^{2}=\sigma_{A}^{2}>\sigma_{0}^{2}, \mu, \phi \text { unknown, for } i \geq \tau
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\tau$ is the unknown change-point.
The test will be based on the second component of the efficient score vector given by (3.8), that is

$$
\frac{\partial l_{k}}{\partial \sigma^{2}}\left(\sigma_{0}^{2}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)=-\frac{k}{2 \sigma_{0}^{2}}+\frac{1}{2 \sigma_{0}^{4}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j}\left(Y_{i-j}^{-}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]^{2} .
$$

By standardization we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{k}\left(\sigma_{0}^{2}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2} \sigma_{0}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right), \tag{3.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where now $\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}$ are defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}=\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) . \tag{3.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here $\hat{\mu}_{k}$ and $\hat{\phi}_{k}$ are given by (3.10) and (3.12) respectively. In the following lemma we show that the standardized component of the efficient score vector can be approximated by a Brownian process $W(\cdot)$.

Lemma 3.5 Under the hypothesis $H_{0}: \sigma^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}, \mu, \phi$ unknown, and conditions (3.2), (3.3), there exists a Brownian motion W(.), such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|W_{k}\left(\sigma_{0}^{2}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)-W(k)\right| \stackrel{\text { a.s. }}{=} o\left(k^{1 / \nu}\right) \tag{3.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $\nu>2$.

Proof. Relationship (3.23) can be rewritten as

$$
W_{k}=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2} \sigma_{0}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2} \sigma_{0}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(\varepsilon_{i}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right)+\frac{1}{\sqrt{2} \sigma_{0}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}^{2}-\varepsilon_{i}^{2}\right) .
$$

Under our conditions the invariance principle in the claim of the lemma holds for the first sum. Neglecting the coefficient $1 / \sqrt{2} \sigma_{0}^{2}$, in the error term, we add $\pm \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2}$ and obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}^{2}-\varepsilon_{i}^{2}\right)=\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2}-\sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}^{2}+ \\
+ & \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]^{2}-\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k, j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The difference between the first two terms can be written as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\varepsilon_{i}+\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\phi_{j}-\hat{\phi}_{k j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2}-\sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}^{2}= \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\phi_{j}-\hat{\phi}_{k j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2}+2 \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\phi_{j}-\hat{\phi}_{k j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\phi_{j}-\hat{\phi}_{k j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2}+2 \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\phi_{j}-\hat{\phi}_{k j}\right)\left[\sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

and now, as in the last part of the proof of Lemma 3.3, one can see that the difference is of order $O(\log \log k)$.
The remaining terms

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]^{2}-\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \hat{\phi}_{k j j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2}
$$

can be expanded as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu+\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]^{2} \\
& -\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\varepsilon_{i}-\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2} \\
= & \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]^{2}-\sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}^{2} \\
& +\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)+\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\right]^{2} \\
& -\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right]^{2} \\
& -2 \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\left[\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right] \cdot \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right\} \\
& -2 \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\left[\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]\left(\hat{\mu}_{k}-\mu\right) \sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\right\} \\
& +2 \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left[\sum_{j=1}^{p}\left(\hat{\phi}_{k j}-\phi_{j}\right)\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

In Lemma 3.3 was proved that the difference between the first two terms is of order $O(\log \log k)$ a.s. As in Lemma 3.3 one can prove that the third and the fourth terms are of order $O(\log \log k)$ a.s. By Lemma A. 2 the invariance principle holds for $\sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right), j=1, \ldots, p$, from which one can see that the mixed terms with cocfficient 2 are $O(\log \log k)$ a.s. by Lemmas 3.1 and 3.2. and the Lemma is proved.

Based on the above lemma and reasoning as in Remark 3.1 we can define the following test.

TEST 2. Stop and conclude that $H_{0}$ is not supported by the data at the first $k$ when

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{\sigma}(k)=\max _{1 \leq l<k} \frac{1}{\sigma_{0}^{2} \sqrt{2 n_{0}}} \sum_{i=l}^{k}\left(\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}^{2}-\sigma_{0}^{2}\right) \geq C(\alpha) . \tag{3.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Do not reject. $H_{0}$ if it is not rejected by $k=n_{0}$.
Again, $n_{0}$ is the truncation point and $\alpha$ is the level of significance. Note that, here $\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i i}$ are given by (3.24).

Remark 3.2 If we want to monitor both $\mu$ and $\sigma^{2}$ simultaneously we can monitor both statistics $T_{\mu}(k)$ (with $\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}$ replaced by $\sigma_{0}^{2}$. as this is assumed to be known) and $T_{\sigma}(k)$. Note that in this case $\mu$ is also known: and (3.18) and (3.24) are the same. Now we test

$$
H_{0}: \mu=\mu_{0}, \sigma^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}, \phi \text { unkinown, for all } i \geq-p+1
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\mu=\mu_{0}, \sigma^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}, \phi \text { unknown, for }-p+1 \leq i<\tau \\
\mu=\mu_{A}, \sigma^{2}=\sigma_{A}^{2}, \phi \text { unknown, for } i \geq \tau
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\tau$ is the unknown change-point. The test is defined as follows.
TEST 3. Stop and conclude that $H_{0}$ is not supported by the data at the first k: when

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max \left\{T_{\mu}(k), T_{\sigma}(k)\right\} \geq C\left(\alpha^{*}\right) \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Do not reject $H_{0}$ if it is not rejected by $k=n_{0}$.
Here we monitor two parameters, so each test statistic is monitored with a level of significance of $a^{*}$ such that the overall level of significance is $\alpha=1-\left(1-\alpha^{*}\right)^{2}$ (see Remark 2.2). For example, if we want the overall level of significance to be $\alpha=0.05$, we have to choose $\alpha^{*}=0.0253$, and in this case the critical value is $C\left(\alpha^{*}\right)=2.48$.

### 3.4 Monitoring the coefficients of an AR(p) process

In this section we shall consider the problem of testing for a change in the coefficients $\phi_{i}$ 's of an $\operatorname{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ process defined by (3.1). Now the mean $\mu$ and the variance $\sigma^{2}$ are nuisance parameters. The hypothesis of interest

$$
H_{0}: \phi=\phi_{0}, \mu, \sigma^{2} \text { unknown, for all } i \geq-p+1
$$

is tested against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\phi=\phi_{0}, \mu, \sigma^{2} \text { unknown, for }-p+1 \leq i<\tau \\
\phi=\phi_{A}, \mu, \sigma^{2} \text { unknown, for } i \geq \tau
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\tau$ is the unknown change-point, and the new value $\phi_{A}$ is also unknown.
In this case the initial value $\phi_{0}$ is assumed to be known and at each step $k \geq 2$, we shall estimate the misance parameters $\mu$ and $\sigma^{2}$ by

$$
\hat{\mu}_{k}=\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} Y_{i} \quad \text { and } \quad \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}=\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}^{2},
$$

respectively, where the residuals at step $k, \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}$, are now given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}=\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{0 j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) . \tag{3.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

For each $s=1,2, \ldots, p$, the component corresponding to $\phi_{s}$ is given by

$$
V^{(s)}=\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\mu\right) \varepsilon_{i}
$$

When we replace the unknown parameters ly their estimators this becomes

$$
\hat{V}^{(s)}=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \hat{\epsilon}_{k i i}
$$

and standardizing this we have

$$
W_{k}\left(\phi_{0}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}\right)=\left(\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \Gamma\left(\phi_{0}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}\right)\right)^{-1 / 2} \nabla_{\phi} l\left(\phi_{0}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}\right)
$$

The test is based on the following lemma.

Lemma 3.6 Under the lypothesis $H_{0}: \phi=\phi_{0}, \mu, \sigma^{2}$ unknown, and conditions (3.2) and (3.3), there exists a process $W(\cdot)=\left(W^{(1)}, \ldots, W^{(p)}\right)$, with independent Brownian motion components, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|W_{k}\left(\phi_{0}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}\right)-W(k)\right\|^{a . s .} o\left(k^{1 / \nu}\right) \tag{3.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $\nu>2$.

Proof. Let $W_{k}=W_{k}\left(\phi_{0}, \mu, \sigma^{2}\right)$ be the standardized efficient score vector evaluated at the true values of the parameters, and for each $r=1,2, \ldots, p$, let $W_{k}^{(r)}$ be the $r^{t h}$ component of $W_{k}$. Then $W_{k}^{(r)}$ can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{k}^{(r)}=\gamma_{r 1} V^{(1)}+\gamma_{r 2} V^{(2)}+\ldots+\gamma_{r p} V^{(p)} \tag{3.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\gamma_{r j}$ are the components of the matrix $\left(\sigma^{-2} \Gamma\right)^{-1 / 2}$. By using the definition of $V^{(s)}$ we can write

$$
W_{k}^{(r)}=\sum_{t=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{t}\left\{\sum_{s=1}^{p} \gamma_{r s} \frac{\left(Y_{t-s}-\mu\right)}{\sigma^{2}}\right\}=\sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{t} X_{t-1}^{(r)}
$$

where $X_{l}^{(r)}=\sum_{s=1}^{p} \gamma_{r s} \sigma^{-2}\left(Y_{t+1-s}-\mu\right)$. As in the proof of Lemma A.1, for each $t \in \mathbb{Z}, X_{t}^{(r)}$ can be written as $X_{i}^{(r)}=\sum_{i \geq 0} \tilde{\alpha}_{i}^{(r)} \varepsilon_{t-i}$, where the constants $\tilde{\alpha}_{i}^{(r)}$ satisfy the inequality $\left|\tilde{\alpha}_{i}^{(r)}\right| \leq \tilde{N} \tilde{N}^{(r)} \alpha^{i}$, for some $\alpha \in(0,1)$ and some $\tilde{M}^{(r)} \in(0, \infty)$. Arguing as in the proof of Lemma A. 2 one can prove that Eberlein's theorem applies for each component $W_{k}^{(r)}, r=1,2, \ldots, p$. As the components are uncorrelated there exists a process $W^{( }(\cdot)=\left(W^{(1)}, \ldots, W^{(p)}\right)$, with independent Brownian motion components, such that

$$
\left\|W_{k}-W(k)\right\| \stackrel{a . s .}{=} o\left(k^{1 / \nu^{\prime}}\right)
$$

for some $\nu>2$.
Now it is enough to prove that $\left\|W_{k}\left(\phi_{0}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}\right)-W_{k}\right\| \stackrel{\text { a.s. }}{=} O(\log \log k)$, and this follows from (3.30) if we prove that $\left|\hat{V}^{(s)}-V^{(s)}\right| \stackrel{\text { a.s. }}{=} O(\log \log k)$, for
each $s=1,2, \ldots, p$. The difference $\hat{V}^{(s)}-V^{(s)}$ is written as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{V}^{(s)}-V^{(s)}= & \left(\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}}-\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\mu\right) \varepsilon_{i}+\frac{\sigma^{2}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \frac{1}{\sigma^{2}}\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i} \\
& +\frac{\sigma^{2}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\left(\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}-\varepsilon_{i}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The rate is obtained by application of the invariance principle for $\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\right.$ $\mu) \varepsilon_{i}$, (see Lemma A.2), and $\sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}$ in the first and the second term of the above relationship.

For the sum in the last term we write

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\left(\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}-\varepsilon_{i}\right)= \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\left[\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{0 j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)+\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{0 j}\left(Y_{i-j}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\left(Y_{i-s}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\left[\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\left(1-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{0 j}\right)\right]\right\} \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\left[\left(Y_{i-s}-\mu\right)+\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]\left[\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\left(1-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{0 j}\right)\right]\right\} \\
& =k\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)^{2}\left(1-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{0 j}\right)+\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\left(1-\sum_{j=1}^{p} \phi_{0 j}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\mu\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, by Lemma A.1, from the invariance principle for $\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-s}-\mu\right)$ and Lemmas 3.1 and 3.2 we get rate $O(\log \log k)$ a.s. again and the proof is completed.

Based on the above lemma we can define a procedure useful in testing for a change in the coefficients $\phi_{i}{ }^{\prime} s$. Denote $\hat{V}=\left(\hat{V}^{(1)}, \ldots, \hat{V}^{(p)}\right)^{t}$. Then the vector $\boldsymbol{T}=\left(\sigma^{-2} \boldsymbol{\Gamma}\right)^{-1 / 2} \hat{\boldsymbol{V}}$ has $p$ independent components and we can monitor each component, with a level of significance $\alpha^{*}=1-(1-\alpha)^{1 / p}$ and the overall level of significance will be $\alpha$.

Remark 3.3 Note that the matrix $\sigma^{-2} \Gamma$ does not depend on $\mu$ or $\sigma^{2}$. but only on the vector of the coefficients $\phi$ which is assumed to be knoum in this case. This method can be applied for any $p \geq 1$ but for $p \geq 3$ the matrix $\left(\sigma^{-2} \Gamma\right)^{-1 / 2}$ is complicated to compute symbolically. In any particular problem. $\phi_{i}^{\prime}$ s are known and $\sigma^{-2} \Gamma$ is a numerical matrix so $\left(\sigma^{-2} \Gamma\right)^{-1 / 2}$ can be easily computed. For simplicity we shall consider in the next sections only the cases of $p=1$ and $p=2$ respectively.

### 3.4.1 AR(1) process

Consider the model (3.1) with $p=1$ and $\phi_{1}=\phi$, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{i}-\mu=\phi\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}, \quad i \geq 0 \tag{3.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this case the stationarity condition (3.3) is equivalent to $|\phi|<1$. From (3.9) the component of the efficient score vector corresponding to $\phi$ is given by

$$
V^{(1)}=\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right) \varepsilon_{i}
$$

and the information matrix is given by

$$
I\left(\phi, \mu, \sigma^{2}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\frac{1}{1-\phi^{2}} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \frac{(1-\phi)^{2}}{\sigma^{2}} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \frac{1}{2 \sigma^{4}}
\end{array}\right), \quad \text { and } \quad \Gamma=\frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi^{2}}
$$

Based on Lemma 3.6, reasoning as in Remark 3.1, one can prove that, as $n \rightarrow \infty$

$$
\max _{1 \leq l<k \leq n} \frac{\sqrt{1-\phi^{2}}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2} \sqrt{n}} \sum_{i=l}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i} \xrightarrow{\mathcal{D}} \sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1}|W(t)|
$$

where $\{W(t)\}_{0 \leq t \leq 1}$ is a standard Wiener process. The test for monitoring the coefficient $\phi$ is defined as follows.

TEST 4. Stop and conclude that $H_{0}$ is not supported by the data at the first $k$ when

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{\phi}(k)=\max _{1 \leq l<k} \frac{\sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2} \sqrt{n_{0}}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i} \geq C(\alpha) \tag{3.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Do not reject $H_{0}$ if it is not rejected by $k=n_{0}$, where $n_{0}$ is the truncation point and $\alpha$ is the level of significance of the test.

### 3.4.2 AR(2) process

Now consider the model (3.1) with $p=2$, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{i}-\mu=\phi_{1}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\phi_{2}\left(Y_{i-2}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}, \quad i \geq-1 \tag{3.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

When the observations come from an $\mathrm{AR}(2)$ process the stationarity condition implies that the parameters $\phi_{1}$ and $\phi_{2}$ must lie in the triangular region

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\phi_{1}+\phi_{2}<1 \\
\phi_{2}-\phi_{1}<1 \\
-1<\phi_{2}<1
\end{array}\right.
$$

The components of the efficient score vector corresponding to $\phi_{1}$ and $\phi_{2}$ are given by

$$
V^{(1)}=\frac{\partial l_{k}}{\partial \phi_{1}}=\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right) \varepsilon_{i}, \text { and } V^{(2)}=\frac{\partial l_{k}}{\partial \phi_{2}}=\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-2}-\mu\right) \varepsilon_{i},
$$

respectively. The information matrix is given by

$$
\mathrm{I}\left(\phi_{1}, \phi_{2}, \mu, \sigma^{2}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
\frac{1-\phi_{2}}{\left(1+\phi_{2}\right)\left(\left(1-\phi_{2}\right)^{2}-\phi_{1}^{2}\right]} & \frac{\phi_{1}}{\left(1+\phi_{2}\right)\left[\left(1-\phi_{2}\right)^{2}-\phi_{1}^{2}\right]} & 0 & 0 \\
\frac{\phi_{1}}{\left(1+\phi_{2}\right)\left[\left(1-\phi_{2}\right)^{2}-\phi_{1}^{2}\right]} & \left.\frac{1}{\left(1+\phi_{2}\right)\left[\left(1-\phi_{2}\right.\right.}\left(1-\phi_{2}\right)^{2}-\phi_{1}^{2}\right] & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \frac{\left(1-\phi_{1}-\phi_{2}\right)^{2}}{\sigma^{2}} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{1}{1 \sigma^{4}}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

In this case

$$
\left(\frac{1}{\sigma^{2}} \Gamma\right)^{-1 / 2}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\gamma_{1} & \gamma_{2} \\
\gamma_{2} & \gamma_{1}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \gamma_{1}=\frac{\sqrt{1+\phi_{2}}}{2}\left\{\sqrt{1-\phi_{1}-\phi_{2}}+\sqrt{1+\phi_{1}-\phi_{2}}\right\}, \\
& \gamma_{2}=\frac{\sqrt{1+\phi_{2}}}{2}\left\{\sqrt{1-\phi_{1}-\phi_{2}}-\sqrt{1+\phi_{1}-\phi_{2}}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We shall denote

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \hat{V}_{k l}^{(1)}\left(\hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}\right)=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \sum_{i=l}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}, \\
& \hat{V}_{k l}^{(2)}\left(\hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}\right)=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \sum_{i=l}^{k}\left(Y_{i-2}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \hat{\varepsilon}_{l i},
\end{aligned}
$$

for any $l<k$, where $\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}$ are given in (3.28). Then for each $k \geq 2$ we define

$$
\begin{aligned}
& T^{(1)}(k)=\max _{1 \leq l<k}\left\{\gamma_{1} \hat{V}_{k l}^{(1)}+\gamma_{2} \hat{V}_{k l}^{(2)}\right\}, \\
& T^{(2)}(k)=\max _{1 \leq l<k}\left\{\gamma_{2} \hat{V}_{k l}^{(1)}+\gamma_{1} \hat{V}_{k l l}^{(2)}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The two statistics are independent, and by Lemma 3.6, as $n \rightarrow \infty$,

$$
\max _{2 \leq k \leq n} \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} T^{(i)}(k) \xrightarrow{\mathcal{D}} \sup _{0 \leq 1 \leq 1}|W(t)| \text { for } i=1,2 .
$$

Now we can test

$$
H_{0}: \phi_{1}=\phi_{10}, \phi_{2}=\phi_{20}, \mu, \sigma^{2} \text { unknown, for all } i \geq-p+1,
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\phi_{1}=\phi_{10}, \phi_{2}=\phi_{20}, \mu, \sigma^{2} \text { unknown, for }-p+1 \leq i<\tau, \\
\phi_{1}=\phi_{1 A}, \phi_{2}=\phi_{2 A}, \mu, \sigma^{2} \text { unknown, for } i \geq \tau,
\end{array}\right.
$$

by using the following procedure.
TEST 5. Stop and conclude that $H_{0}$ is not supported by the data at the first. k when

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(k)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max \left\{T^{(1)}(k), T^{(2)}(k)\right\} \geq C\left(\alpha^{*}\right) . \tag{3.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Fail to reject $H_{0}$ if it is not rejected by $k=n_{0}$, where $n_{0}$ is the truncation point and $\alpha^{*}=1-(1-\alpha)^{1 / 2}$, where $\alpha$ is the level of significance of the test.

Remark 3.4 In the case of independent observations Gombay (2003) developed two other tests based on $k^{-1 / 2} W_{k}$ and $n^{-1 / 2} W_{k}$ statistics, respectively. Lemmas 3.1-3.6 allow us to extend these two tests to the case of an $A R(p)$ process. Our simulations (unreported here) showed that these tests outperform the CUSUM-type test only if the change is at the beginning, i.e. $\tau=1$. As we are interested in the more realistic case $\tau>1$, we have chosen to present only the CUSUM-type test.

### 3.5 Simulation Studies

To evaluate the power of the truncated sequential tests proposed in the previous sections we have carried out some Monte Carlo experiments for each case discussed before.

### 3.5.1 The case of $\mathrm{AR}(1)$ process

First we consider the autoregressive model $\operatorname{AR}(1)$, that is

$$
Y_{i}-\mu=\phi\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}, \quad i \geq 0,
$$

where $|\phi|<1$, and the errors $\varepsilon_{i}$ are independent identically distributed normal random variables with mean zero and variance one. In all tables $n_{0}$ represents the truncation point, $\tau$ is the change-point, and the level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$. Each table presents two different situations, $n_{0}=100$ with a change at $\tau=50$, and $n_{0}=200$ with a change at $\tau=100$, respectively. Each scenario in these simulations is based on 5,000 replicates.
a) Monitoring the mean $\mu$. When testing for a change in the mean of the process we test the hypothesis

$$
H_{0}: \mu=\mu_{0}, \quad \sigma^{2} \text { and } \phi \text { unknown for all } i \geq 1
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\mu=\mu_{0}, \sigma^{2} \text { and } \phi \text { unknown for all } 1 \leq i<\tau, \\
\mu=\mu_{A}>\mu_{0}, \sigma^{2} \text { and } \phi \text { unknown for all } i \geq \tau
\end{array}\right.
$$

The in-control value of the mean is $\mu_{0}=0$, and $\mu_{A}$ was varied over the set $\{0.0,0.1,0.2,0.3,0.4,0.5,0.6,0.7,0.8,0.9,1.0\}$. Here $\sigma^{2}$ and $\phi$ are nuisance parameters. In each case the variance was $\sigma^{2}=1$. We present the empirical power of Test 1 for three different values of the coefficient, $\phi=0.1, \phi=0.5$, and $\phi=-0.5$. The test statistic is $T_{\mu}(k)$ defined in (3.22).

These simulations support that Test 1 is consistent against the change point alternative, that is, as the truncation point $n_{0}$ grows to infinity, the power of the test goes to unity for any change point alternative. From Table 3.1 we also note that, for fixed truncation point and fixed change point, the power of the test decreases as the coefficient $\phi$ increases from -1 to 1 . This is easier seen in Figure 3.1 and it happens because the drift $D$ is proportional with $(1-\phi)$.

Table 3.1: Test for monitoring the mean of an $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ model $Y_{i}-\mu_{0}=\phi\left(Y_{i-1}-\right.$ $\left.\mu_{0}\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\sigma^{2}=1$ and the in-control mean is $\mu_{0}=0$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$.

|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  |  | $\phi=0.1$ |  |  |  |  |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\mu_{A}$ | POWER | AVST | POWER | AVST | POWER | AVST |
| 100 | 50 | 0.0 | 0.031 | 99.54 | 0.025 | 99.72 | 0.033 | 99.46 |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.070 | 99.06 | 0.038 | 99.56 | 0.134 | 98.23 |
|  | 0.2 | 0.156 | 98.18 | 0.063 | 99.34 | 0.393 | 95.12 |  |
|  | 0.3 | 0.290 | 96.70 | 0.095 | 99.00 | 0.725 | 89.83 |  |
|  | 0.4 | 0.463 | 94.63 | 0.136 | 98.66 | 0.935 | 83.87 |  |
|  | 0.5 | 0.652 | 92.15 | 0.186 | 98.24 | 0.992 | 78.95 |  |
|  | 0.6 | 0.809 | 89.38 | 0.248 | 97.72 | 0.999 | 75.48 |  |
|  | 0.7 | 0.916 | 86.83 | 0.313 | 97.18 | 1.000 | 73.07 |  |
|  | 0.8 | 0.969 | 84.63 | 0.388 | 96.61 | 1.000 | 71.35 |  |
|  | 0.9 | 0.988 | 82.90 | 0.455 | 96.06 | 1.000 | 70.11 |  |
|  | 1.0 | 0.996 | 81.63 | 0.518 | 95.56 | 1.000 | 69.20 |  |
| 200 | 100 | 0.0 | 0.037 | 198.59 | 0.033 | 198.86 | 0.036 | 198.45 |
|  | 0.1 | 0.118 | 196.40 | 0.061 | 198.03 | 0.243 | 192.67 |  |
|  | 0.2 | 0.305 | 191.52 | 0.120 | 196.74 | 0.700 | 177.87 |  |
|  | 0.3 | 0.578 | 183.42 | 0.204 | 194.71 | 0.968 | 159.41 |  |
|  | 0.4 | 0.828 | 173.12 | 0.325 | 191.83 | 0.999 | 146.67 |  |
|  | 0.5 | 0.957 | 163.28 | 0.455 | 188.44 | 1.000 | 138.80 |  |
|  | 0.6 | 0.994 | 155.51 | 0.600 | 184.30 | 1.000 | 133.63 |  |
|  | 0.7 | 1.000 | 149.91 | 0.739 | 179.93 | 1.000 | 130.04 |  |
|  | 0.8 | 1.000 | 145.73 | 0.847 | 175.57 | 1.000 | 127.42 |  |
|  | 0.9 | 1.000 | 142.65 | 0.917 | 171.61 | 1.000 | 125.44 |  |
|  | 1.0 | 1.000 | 140.40 | 0.962 | 168.16 | 1.000 | 123.92 |  |



Figure 3.1: Power vs Coefficient when testing change in the mean of an AR(1) model. The truncation point is $n_{0}=200$ and the change point is $\tau=100$. The in-control value is $\mu_{0}$ and the drift after the change is $m=\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}$.


Figure 3.2: Power when testing for change in the coefficient for different $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ models $(b=\phi)$. The truncation point is $n_{0}=200$ and the change point is $\tau=100$. The initial coefficient value is $-0.9,-0.5,0,0.5,0.9$.
b) Monitoring the variance $\sigma^{2}$. We consider the same $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ model but now we shall test for a change in the variance $\sigma^{2}$, while the mean $\mu$ and the coefficient $\phi$ are nuisance parameters. The hypothesis of interest is

$$
H_{0}: \sigma^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}, \mu \text { and } \phi \text { unknown for all } i \geq 1,
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\sigma^{2}=\sigma_{0}^{2}, \mu \text { and } \phi \text { unknown for all } 1 \leq i<\tau, \\
\sigma^{2}=\sigma_{A}^{2}>\sigma_{0}^{2}, \mu \text { and } \phi \text { unknown for all } i \geq \tau
\end{array}\right.
$$

The in control value of the variance is $\sigma_{0}=1$, and $\sigma_{A}$ was varied over the set $\{1.0,1.1,1.2,1.3,1.4,1.5,1.6,1.7,1.8,1.9,2.0\}$. In Table 3.2 we present the power of Test 2 for two coefficient values, $\phi=0.1$, and $\phi=0.5$. In each case the mean of the process was $\mu=0$. The test statistic is $T_{\sigma}(k)$ defined in (3.26).

These simulations support that Test 2 is consistent against the clange point alternative. From Table 3.2 (and other simulations studies mreported here) we noted that, for fixed truncation point and fixed change point, the power of the test remains almost the same for any $\phi$ between -1 and 1 .

Table 3.2: Test for monitoring $\sigma$ of an $\mathrm{AR}(1)$ model $Y_{i}-\mu=\phi\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\mu=0$ and the in-control value is $\sigma_{0}=1$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$.

| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\sigma_{A}$ | $\phi=0.1$ |  | $\phi=0.5$ |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  | POWER | AVST | POWER | AVST |
| 100 | 50 | 1.0 | 0.046 | 98.77 | 0.046 | 98.85 |
|  |  | 1.1 | 0.171 | 96.75 | 0.170 | 96.74 |
|  |  | 1.2 | 0.433 | 91.91 | 0.433 | 91.11 |
|  |  | 1.3 | 0.712 | 85.25 | 0.715 | 85.26 |
|  |  | 1.4 | 0.897 | 78.45 | 0.899 | 78.47 |
|  |  | 1.5 | 0.970 | 72.86 | 0.969 | 72.81 |
|  |  | 1.6 | 0.990 | 68.77 | 0.990 | 68.77 |
|  |  | 1.7 | 0.998 | 6.5 .71 | 0.998 | 65.67 |
|  |  | 1.8 | 1.000 | 63.36 | 1.000 | 63.35 |
| 200 | 100 | 1.0 | 0.043 | 198.03 | 0.043 | 198.00 |
|  |  | 1.1 | 0.260 | 190.94 | 0.260 | 190.84 |
|  |  | 1.2 | 0.674 | 173.95 | 0.673 | 154.30 |
|  |  | 1.3 | 0.935 | 154.41 | 0.935 | 154.30 |
|  |  | 1.4 | 0.993 | 140.42 | 0.994 | 140.26 |
|  |  | 1.5 | 1.000 | 131.37 | 1.000 | 131.27 |
|  |  | 1.6 | 1.000 | 125.34 | 1.000 | 125.25 |
|  |  | 1.7 | 1.000 | 121.14 | 1.000 | 121.03 |
|  |  | 1.8 | 1.000 | 117.95 | 1.000 | 117.83 |

c) Monitoring the coefficient $\phi$. When monitoring the coefficient $\phi$ of the AR(1) model the hypotheses of interest are

$$
H_{0}: \phi=\phi_{0}, \mu \text { and } \sigma^{2} \text { unknown for all } i \geq 1
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\phi=\phi_{0}, \mu \text { and } \sigma^{2} \text { unknown for all } 1 \leq i<\tau \\
\phi=\phi_{A}>\phi_{0}, \mu \text { and } \sigma^{2} \text { unknown for all } i \geq \tau
\end{array}\right.
$$

Here $\mu$ and $\sigma^{2}$ are nuisance parameters. The test statistics is $T_{\phi}(k)$ defined in (3.32). In each case the mean was $\mu=0$ and the variance was
$\sigma^{2}=1$. We present three different situations. In Table 3.3, the in control value of the coefficient is $\phi_{0}=0.1$, and $\phi_{A}$ was varied over the set $\{0.1,0.2,0.3,0.4,0.5,0.6,0.7,0.8,0.9,1.0\}$. In Table 3.4, the in control value of the coefficient is $\phi_{0}=-0.5$, and $\phi_{A}$ was varied over the set $\{-0.5,-0.4$, $-0.3,-0.2,-0.1,0.0,0.1,0.2,0.3,0.4,0.5\}$, and in Table 3.5 , the in control value of the coefficient is $\phi_{0}=0.5$, and $\phi_{A}$ was varied over the set $\{0.5,0.6,0.7,0.8,0.9,1.0\}$.

Again, these simulations support that Test 4 is consistent against the change-point alternative. From these tables we also note that, for fixed truncation point and fixed change point, the power of the test increases as the coefficient $\phi$ increases from -1 to 1 . this can easily be seen in Figure 3.2 which presents the power of the test when the in-control value of the coefficient is $-0.9,-0.5,0,0.5,0.9$.

Based on our simulation results (some unreported here) we can observe that the power of the tests depends on the coefficients $\phi_{i}^{\prime}$ s of the autoregressive process. For an $\mathrm{AR}(1)$ process we recommend to choose a truncation point $n_{0} \geq 100$ when $|\phi|<0.5$, and a truncation point $n_{0} \geq 200$ when $0.5 \leq|\phi|<$ 0.7 . For a coefficient $0.7 \leq|\phi| \leq 0.9$ the truncation point around 1000 will provide a good power. This is in accordance with the recommendation of Tang and MacNeill(1993) in a study of effect of serial correlation on tests for parameter change in an $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ model.

Table 3.3: Test for monitoring the coefficient $\phi_{0}$ of the $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ model $Y_{i}-\mu=$ $\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\phi_{0}=0.1, \mu=0, \sigma^{2}=1$ and various $\phi_{A}$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$ and $C^{\prime}(\alpha)=2.24$.

| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\phi_{A}$ | POWER | AVST |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 100 | 50 | 0.1 | 0.025 | 99.54 |
|  |  | 0.2 | 0.076 | 98.81 |
|  |  | 0.3 | 0.207 | 97.19 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.436 | 93.63 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.692 | 88.08 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.876 | 81.39 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.967 | 75.05 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 0.993 | 69.57 |
|  |  | 0.9 | 0.999 | 65.12 |
|  |  | 1.0 | 1.000 | 59.25 |
| 200 | 100 | 0.1 | 0.033 | 198.59 |
|  |  | 0.2 | 0.135 | 195.87 |
|  |  | 0.3 | 0.407 | 187.73 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.754 | 173.04 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.949 | 156.20 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.995 | 142.07 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 1.000 | 131.34 |
|  | 0.8 | 1.000 | 123.35 |  |
|  |  | 0.9 | 1.000 | 117.25 |
|  | 1.0 | 1.000 | 112.71 |  |

Table 3.4: Test for monitoring the coefficient $\phi_{0}$ of the $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ model $Y_{i}-\mu=$ $\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\phi_{0}=-0.5, \mu=0, \sigma^{2}=1$ and various $\phi_{A}$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$ and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.

|  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\phi_{A}$ | POWER | AVST |
| 100 | 50 | -0.5 | 0.010 | 99.89 |
|  |  | -0.4 | 0.039 | 99.60 |
|  |  | -0.3 | 0.111 | 99.03 |
|  |  | -0.2 | 0.232 | 97.88 |
|  |  | -0.1 | 0.418 | 9.5 .86 |
|  |  | 0.0 | 0.623 | 93.03 |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.798 | 89.51 |
|  |  | 0.2 | 0.906 | 85.70 |
|  |  | 0.3 | 0.966 | 82.05 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.989 | 78.67 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.998 | 75.47 |
| 200 | 100 | -0.5 | 0.021 | 199.56 |
|  |  | -0.4 | 0.090 | 197.89 |
|  |  | -0.3 | 0.285 | 193.60 |
|  |  | -0.2 | 0.588 | 185.57 |
|  |  | -0.1 | 0.853 | 174.71 |
|  |  | 0.0 | 0.959 | 164.23 |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.994 | 155.41 |
|  |  | 0.2 | 0.999 | 148.17 |
|  |  | 0.3 | 1.000 | 142.02 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 1.000 | 136.63 |

Table 3.5: Test for monitoring the coefficient $\phi_{0}$ of the $\operatorname{AR}(1)$ model $Y_{i}-\mu=$ $\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). $\phi_{0}=0.5, \mu=0, \sigma^{2}=1$ and various $\phi_{A}$. The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$ and $C(\alpha)=2.24$.

| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\phi_{A}$ | POWER | AVST |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 100 | 50 | 0.5 | 0.032 | 99.31 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.121 | 97.92 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.366 | 933.65 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 0.711 | 8.5 .24 |
|  |  | 0.9 | 0.927 | 75.13 |
|  |  | 1.0 | 0.993 | 66.70 |
| 200 | 100 | 0.5 | 0.037 | 198.30 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.210 | 192.79 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.638 | 175.37 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 0.943 | 150.20 |
|  |  | 0.9 | 0.997 | 130.36 |
|  |  | 1.0 | 1.000 | 118.44 |

### 3.5.2 The case of $\operatorname{AR}(2)$ process

Lai (1995) extended some classical sequential change-detection schemes to the $\mathrm{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ model. In this part of the simulation study we shall consider the problem of monitoring the coefficients of an $\operatorname{AR}(2)$ model and our test will be compared to Lai's algorithm. As in Lai's paper we consider an $\operatorname{AR}(2)$ model

$$
Y_{i}-\mu=\phi_{1}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\phi_{2}\left(Y_{i-2}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i},
$$

with $\varepsilon_{i}$ i.i.d. standard normal and bivariate normal $\left(Y_{0}, Y_{-1}\right)$, such that $E Y_{0}=$ $E Y_{-1}=0, \operatorname{Var}\left(Y_{0}\right)=\operatorname{Var}\left(Y_{-1}\right)=1.0227$ and $\operatorname{Cov}\left(Y_{0}, Y_{-1}\right)=-0.1136$.

We shall monitor a change in the coefficients $\phi_{1}$ and $\phi_{2}$. The in-control values are $\phi_{10}=-0.1$ and $\phi_{20}=0.1$ and a change will occur only in $\phi_{10}$. Note that this is known in Lai's algorithm while our test is monitoring both coefficients. Also note that $\sigma^{2}=1$ is a nuisance parameter in both methods,
while the mean $\mu=0$ is assumed to be known with Lai's method but it is a nuisance parameter in our test.

In Table 3.6 the CusumT columns give the empirical power and average stopping time of our test. The truncation point is $n_{0}=1000$ almost equal to the theoretical average stopping time of Lai's algorithm (i.e. 1006). The level of significance is $\alpha=0.05$, the dimension is $d=2$, so $\alpha^{*}=0.0253$ and the critical value is $C=2.48$.

The procedure in Lai (1995) is set up so that the average stopping time under the no-change hypothesis is around 1006. We analyzed this algorithm as follows. The columns Total and Before $\tau$ below the POWER column represent the proportion of stops (power) and the proportion of stops before the change-point, respectively. The columns Total and Before $\tau$ below the AVST column represent the average stopping time and the average stopping time when the algorithm stops before the change-point, respectively. The algorithm was stopped after 6,500 observations.

In Table 3.6 we present two different situations. In the first part of the table the change point is at $\tau=70 \mathrm{as}$ in Lai's paper. In this case Lai's algorithm has a lower AVST and it only stops $4 \%$ of the time before the change-point which is an acceptable percent of false alarms if we consider a level of significance of 0.05 . However, in real life we do not know the change point. In the second part of the table the change-point is at $\tau=500$. Now the CUSUM test still has good power, while Lai's algorithm stops more then $35 \%$ of the time before the change point, i.e. too many false alarms. This behavior is common to all open ended monitoring schemes, where the expected stopping time under the null hypothesis controls the process parameters. We have a truncated-type algorithm, where the overall probability of type I error is under control. We pay for this advantage with increased delay in detection.

Table 3.6: Monitoring the coefficients $\phi_{1}$ and $\phi_{2}$ of the $\mathrm{AR}(2)$ model $Y_{i}-\mu=$ $\phi_{1}\left(Y_{i-1}^{\prime}-\mu\right)+\phi_{2}\left(Y_{i-2}-\mu\right)+\varepsilon_{i}$. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST). The in-control parameters are $\phi_{10}=-0.1$ and $\phi_{20}=0.1$. Only $\phi_{10}$ is changing to $\phi_{1,4}$.

|  |  | POWER |  |  |  |  | AVST |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | :---: |
| $\tau$ | $\phi_{\text {IA }}$ | Total | Before $\tau$ | CusumT |  | Total | Before $\tau$ | CusumT |  |
| 70 | -0.10 | 0.998 | 0.043 | 0.048 |  | 1134.69 | 42.48 | 990.40 |  |
|  | 0.00 | 1.000 | 0.041 | 0.835 |  | 558.40 | 43.62 | 737.30 |  |
|  | 0.10 | 1.000 | 0.040 | 1.000 |  | 261.21 | 43.70 | 422.60 |  |
|  | 0.20 | 1.000 | 0.039 | 1.000 |  | 162.08 | 44.11 | 297.23 |  |
|  | 0.30 | 1.000 | 0.041 | 1.000 |  | 122.91 | 40.03 | 230.31 |  |
|  | 0.40 | 1.000 | 0.039 | 1.000 |  | 103.72 | 40.51 | 186.25 |  |
| 500 | -0.10 | 1.000 | 0.358 | 0.042 | 1137.54 | 240.57 | 992.10 |  |  |
|  | 0.00 | 1.000 | 0.365 | 0.477 | 744.43 | 238.36 | 934.23 |  |  |
|  | 0.10 | 1.000 | 0.371 | 0.962 |  | 543.95 | 238.66 | 798.69 |  |
|  | 0.20 | 1.000 | 0.370 | 1.000 |  | 470.93 | 239.93 | 700.20 |  |
| 0.30 | 1.000 | 0.364 | 1.000 |  | 444.42 | 242.27 | 638.39 |  |  |
|  | 0.40 | 1.000 | 0.360 | 1.000 |  | 432.17 | 244.31 | 601.25 |  |

### 3.6 Consistency of the test statistics

To understand the process under the alternative hypothesis of change we shall describe in detail the asymptotic behavior of the standardized efficient score vector in the case of an $A R(1)$ model. In the case of a ligher order process the conclusions are similar but will not be written out in detail because of unavoidable notational complexities.

We will consider only the cases of monitoring the mean and the coefficients of the process. In the case of monitoring the variance the conclusion is similar and much simpler to obtain so it will be omitted.

From Lemmas 3.7 and 3.8 we can see the consistency of Tests 1 and 4, respectively, provided $\frac{n_{1}-\tau}{\sqrt{n_{1}}} \rightarrow \infty$, as $n_{0} \rightarrow \infty$, where $\tau$ is the unknown fixed time of change, and $n_{0}$ is the truncation point of the test. Consider first the case of monitoring the mean of the process.

Lemma 3.7 Assume conditions (3.1), (3.2), and (3.3) hold witl $\mu=\mu_{A}$ for the sequence $\left(Y_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$. Then there exists a Brownian motion $W(\cdot)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|W_{k}\left(\mu_{0}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)-k D-\gamma W(k)\right| \stackrel{\text { ass }}{=} o\left(k^{1 / \nu}\right) \tag{3.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $\nu>2$, where $\gamma$ and $D$ are constants specified in the proof. The sign of drift, $D$ is the same as that of the difference $\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}$.

Proof. First, we describe the behavior of the restricted m.l.e.'s if $\mu=\mu_{A}$. In the $\mathrm{AR}(1)$ model

$$
\hat{\phi}_{k}=\frac{\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{0}\right)\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{0}\right)}{\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}}
$$

In the denominator we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2} & =\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}+\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2} \\
& =\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)^{2}+\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}+2\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] \\
& =\frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi^{2}}+\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
\end{aligned}
$$

using the invariance principle for $\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)$ (Lemma A.1). Similarly, the numerator can be approximated as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{0}\right)\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{0}\right)= \\
& =\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i-1}^{-}-\mu_{A}\right)\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{A}\right)+\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{A}\right)\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)+\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A A}\right)\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] \\
& \quad+\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2} \\
& =\phi \frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi^{2}}+\left(\mu_{A A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, with

$$
\phi_{0 . A}=\frac{\phi \frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi^{2}}+\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}}{\frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi^{2}}+\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}} \text { we have }\left|\hat{\phi}_{k}-\phi_{0 A}\right|=O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \text { a.s. }
$$

For the variance estimator, as $\varepsilon_{i}=\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{A}\right)-\phi\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)$, using the same principles, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{0}\right)-\hat{\phi}_{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{0}\right)\right]^{2} \\
= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{A}\right)-\phi\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)+\left(\phi-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)+\left(1-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)\right]^{2} \\
= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\varepsilon_{i}+\left(\phi-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)+\left(1-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\left(\mu_{A-}-\mu_{0}\right)\right]^{2} \\
= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}^{2}+\frac{\left(\phi-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)^{2}}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)^{2}+\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}\left(1-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)^{2} \\
& +2 \frac{\left(\phi-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)+2 \frac{\left(1-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i} \\
& +2\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right) \frac{\left(\phi-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\left(1-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}^{*}-\mu_{A}\right) \\
= & \sigma^{2}+\frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi^{2}}\left(\phi-\phi_{0 A}\right)^{2}+\left(\mu_{A A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}\left(1-\phi_{0 . A}\right)^{2}+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \\
= & \sigma_{0 . A}^{2}+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\sigma_{0 A}^{2}=\sigma^{2}+\frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi^{2}}\left(\phi-\phi_{0, A}\right)^{2}+\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}\left(1-\phi_{0 . A}\right)^{2}$.
The standardized efficient score vector is approximated as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& W_{k}\left(\mu_{0}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}, \hat{\phi}_{k}\right)=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{0}\right)-\hat{\phi}_{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] \\
& =\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu_{A}\right)-\phi\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)+\left(\phi-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A}\right)+\left(1-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] \\
& =\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\varepsilon_{i}+\left(\phi-\phi_{0 A}\right)\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A A}\right)\right]+\left(\phi_{0 A}-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right) \frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu_{A A}\right) \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}}\left[k\left(1-\phi_{0 A}\right)\left(\mu_{A A}-\mu_{0}\right)+k\left(\phi_{0 A}-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right)\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

As in Lemma A. 1 the first sum can be approximated by $\gamma W(k)$ with an a.s. error of order $o\left(k^{1 / \nu}\right)$, where $\gamma^{2}=\sigma_{0.4}^{-2}\left[\sigma^{2}+\left(\phi-\phi_{0 A}\right)^{2} \frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi^{2}}\right]$, and $W(\cdot)$ is a
standard Brownian motion. The dominant term in the error is $k\left(\phi_{0 A}-\hat{\phi}_{k}\right) \stackrel{\text { a.s. }}{=}$ $O(\sqrt{k \log \log k})$, so we get for the drift of the process

$$
D=\frac{\left(1-\phi_{0 . A}\right)}{\sigma_{0 . A}}\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right), \text { a.s. }
$$

per observation. Note that

$$
1-\phi_{0 . A}=\frac{(1-\phi) \sigma^{2}}{\sigma^{2}+\left(1-\phi^{2}\right)\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)^{2}}
$$

so the drift is proportional to ( $1-\phi$ ) and this explains the results obtained in the first part of our simulation study.

Remark 3.5 In Lemma 3.7 we assumed that the change point is $\tau=1$. When the change point is $\tau \geq 2$, in the same way one can prove that the drift is

$$
D=\frac{\left(1-\phi_{0 . A}\right)}{\sigma_{0.4}}\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)+O\left(\sqrt{(k-\tau)^{-1} \log \log (k-\tau)}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

per observation after the change. So the drift in the standardized efficient score vector will be

$$
(k-\tau) D=(k-\tau) \frac{\left(1-\phi_{0 A}\right)}{\sigma_{0 A}}\left(\mu_{A}-\mu_{0}\right)+O(\sqrt{(k-\tau) \log \log (k-\tau)}) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

In the case of monitoring the coefficient $\phi$ the consistency of the test statistic follows from the next lemma.

Lemma 3.8 Assume conditions (3.1), (3.2), and (3.3) hold with $\phi=\phi_{A}$ for the sequence $\left(Y_{k}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$. Then there exists a Brownian motion $W(\cdot)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|W_{k}\left(\phi_{0}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}\right)-k D-\gamma W(k)\right| \stackrel{\text { a.s. }}{=} o\left(k^{1 / \nu}\right) \tag{3.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $\nu>2$, where $\gamma$ and $D$ are constants specified in the proof. The sign of drift $D$ is the same as that of the difference $\phi_{1}-\phi_{0}$.

Proof. As in Lemma 3.1 we can prove that $\left|\hat{\mu}_{k}-\mu\right|=O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right)$. Note that under the alternative the errors are given by $\varepsilon_{i}=\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)-\phi_{A}\left(Y_{i-1}-\right.$ $\mu$ ), and we estimate them by $\hat{\varepsilon}_{k i}=\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)$. For the variance estimator we can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \hat{\epsilon}_{k i}^{2}=\frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]^{2} \\
= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{i}-\mu\right)+\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)-\phi_{A}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\phi_{A}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)\right. \\
& \left.-\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}^{-}-\mu\right)+\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)-\phi_{0}\left(Y_{i-1}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]^{2},
\end{aligned}
$$

which gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left[\varepsilon_{i}+\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\left(1-\phi_{0}\right)\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]^{2} \\
= & \frac{1}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}^{2}+\frac{\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)^{2}}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)^{2}+2 \frac{\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right) \\
& +2\left(1-\phi_{0}\right)\left[\frac{\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}+\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right) \frac{\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)}{k} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& +\left(1-\phi_{0}\right)^{2}\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)^{2},
\end{aligned}
$$

and using the same principles, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2} & =\sigma^{2}+\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)^{2} \frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi_{A}^{2}}+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \\
& =\sigma_{0 . A}^{2}+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\sigma_{0 . A}^{2}=\sigma^{2}+\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)^{2} \frac{\sigma^{2}}{1-\phi_{A}^{2}}$.

The standardized efficient score vector is approximated as

$$
\begin{aligned}
W_{k}\left(\phi_{0}, \hat{\mu}_{k}, \hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}\right)= & \frac{\sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \hat{\varepsilon}_{k i} \\
= & \frac{\sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\left[\varepsilon_{i}+\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\left(1-\phi_{0}\right)\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]\right. \\
& \left.\times\left[\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)\right]\right\} \\
= & \frac{\sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)+\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right) \frac{\sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right)^{2} \\
& +\frac{\sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}}\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{k} \varepsilon_{i}+k\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right)^{2}\left(1-\phi_{0}\right) \frac{\sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}} \\
& +\left(1-2 \phi_{0}+\phi_{A}\right) \frac{\sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}}\left(\mu-\hat{\mu}_{k}\right) \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i-1}-\mu\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The first sum can be approximated by $\gamma W(k)$ with an a.s. error of order $o\left(k^{1 / \nu}\right)$ for some $\nu>2$, where $\gamma^{2}=\sigma_{0 A}^{-4}\left(1-\phi_{0}^{2}\right)^{-1}\left[\sigma^{2} \phi_{A}\left(1-\phi_{0}\right)^{2}\right]$, and $W(\cdot)$ is a standard Brownian motion. The second term can be approximated by $\left.k\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right) \frac{\sigma^{2} \sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\sigma_{0 . A}^{2}\left(1-\phi_{A}^{2}\right.}\right)$ with an error of order $O(\sqrt{k \log \log k})$. The last three terms produce an error of order $O(\log \log k)$. So, we get for the drift of the process

$$
D=\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right) \frac{\sigma^{2} \sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\sigma_{0 . A}^{2}\left(1-\phi_{A}^{2}\right)}+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

per observation. Replacing $\sigma_{0 . A}^{2}$ by its formulae the drift becomes

$$
D=\frac{\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right) \sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\left(1-\phi_{A}^{2}\right)+\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)^{2}}+O\left(\sqrt{k^{-1} \log \log k}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

per observation and the result of the lemma follows. Note that the drift is proportional with $\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)$ and this explains the results obtained in our simulation study.

Remark 3.6 In the above lemma we assumed that the change point is $\tau=1$. When the change point is $\tau \geq 2$, in the same way one can prove that the drift is

$$
D=\frac{\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right) \sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\left(1-\phi_{A}^{2}\right)+\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)^{2}}+O\left(\sqrt{(k-\tau)^{-1} \log \log (k-\tau)}\right) \text { a.s. }
$$

for each observation after the change point. So the drift in the standardized efficient score vector will be
$(k-\tau) D=(k-\tau) \frac{\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right) \sqrt{1-\phi_{0}^{2}}}{\left(1-\phi_{A}^{2}\right)+\left(\phi_{A}-\phi_{0}\right)^{2}}+O(\sqrt{(k-\tau) \log \log (k-\tau)})$ a.s.

## Chapter 4

## Sequential ANOVA

### 4.1 Preliminaries

This chapter is concerned with the problem of sequential comparison of three or more groups. The problem is frequently faced in clinical trials. Some work has already been done in the case of comparison of three groups. For more details we refer to Siegmund (1993) and Betensky (1996). The methods proposed are dealing with the simplest situation where the responses are independent, normally distributed random variables with a common known variance. The sequential F-test proposed by Siegmund (1980) deals with the case of more then three groups but the analytic approximations will be more complicated.

Here we compute the critical values for the tests of Gombay (2003a) and show how these tests can be used for this propose. These tests are compared to the sequential F-test in a simulation study. In the last section we shall show how the CUSUM test defined in the second chapter can be used for a sequential change-point ANOVA problem.

We shall assume that observations are made sequentially on vectors $\mathbf{Y}_{\mathrm{k}}=$ $\left(Y_{1 k}, Y_{2 k}, \ldots, Y_{d k}\right)^{t}, k \geq 1$, where $d$ denotes the number of groups (treatments), and $Y_{i k}$ is the $k^{\text {th }}$ observation from group (treatment) $i$. The observations are assumed to be independently and normally distributed with common variance, i.e., for each $i=1,2, \ldots, d$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{i k} \text { iid } N\left(\mu_{i}, \sigma^{2}\right), \text { for all } k \geq 1 \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Considering $\sigma^{2}$ as a nuisance parameter, we are interested in testing

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{0}: \mu_{1}=\mu_{2}=\ldots=\mu_{d}, \quad \text { against } H_{A}: \text { not } H_{0} . \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 4.2 Sequential F-test

The sequential F-test is proposed by Siegmund (1980) and it is based on the $\log$ likelihood ratio statistics. With the above notation let $\bar{Y}_{i .}=k^{-1} \sum_{j=1}^{k} Y_{i j}$ and $\bar{Y}_{. .}=(k d)^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{d} \sum_{j=1}^{k} Y_{i j}$ be the group sample means and the overall sample mean, respectively, based on $k$ observations. The log likelihood ratio statistics for testing (4.2) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{k}=\frac{k d}{2} \log \left\{1+\frac{k \sum_{i=1}^{d}\left(\bar{Y}_{i .}-\bar{Y}_{. .}\right)^{2}}{\sum_{i=1}^{d} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i j}-\bar{Y}_{i .}\right)^{2}}\right\} . \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

It will be convenient to use the following parametrization. Define $\mu=d^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{d} \mu_{i}$ and $\alpha_{i}=\mu-\mu_{i}$. Then $E\left(Y_{i k}\right)=\mu+\alpha_{i}$, with $\sum_{i=1}^{d} \alpha_{i}=0$. Now the hypothesis of interest becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{0}: \sum_{i=1}^{d} \alpha_{i}^{2}=0, \quad \text { versus } \quad H_{A}: \sum_{i=1}^{d} \alpha_{i}^{2}>0 . \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The test is defined as follows.

Sequential F-test. Given integers $k_{0}<n_{0}$ and constants $0<c \leq a$. stop sampling at $\min \left(T, n_{0}\right)$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
T=\inf \left\{k: k \geq k_{0}, L_{k}>a\right\}, \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and reject. $H_{0}$ if either $T \leq n_{0}$ or $T>n_{0}$ and $L_{n_{1}}>c$.
According to Siegmund (1980) the power of the test depends on the parameters $\alpha_{1}, \ldots, \alpha_{d}, \mu$, and $\sigma^{2}$ only through the value of $\delta=\sigma^{-1}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{d} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}$. The power function of the test is defined by

$$
P_{\delta}\left(T \leq n_{0}\right)+P_{\delta}\left(T>n_{0}, L_{n_{0}}>c\right) .
$$

An exact value of the power function is very hard to obtain for $d \geq 3$. To obtain a level of significance $\alpha$, the constants $c$ and $a$ are chosen based on the following approximation given in Siegmund (1980)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha \approx P_{0}\left(L_{k_{1}} \geq a\right)+P_{0}\left(c<L_{n_{4}} \leq a\right)+P_{0}\left(k_{0}<T \leq n_{0}\right) \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

The first two terms on the right-hand side of (4.6) may be obtained directly from tables of F distribution and the last term is approximated as follows

$$
\begin{aligned}
P_{0}\left(k_{0}<T \leq n_{0}\right) \approx & 2 \exp \{-a\}\left(\frac{a}{d}\right)^{\frac{d-1}{2}}\left\{\Gamma\left(\frac{d-1}{2}\right)\right\}^{-1} \\
& \times \int_{l_{1}}^{l_{2}} x^{d-2} v_{d}(x) \sqrt{1+\frac{x^{2}}{d}}\left\{\log \left(1+\frac{x^{2}}{d}\right)\right\}^{\frac{1-d d}{2}} d x,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\Gamma(\cdot)$ is the well known gamma function, $l_{1}=\sqrt{d\left\{\exp \left(\frac{2 a}{n_{0} d}\right)-1\right\}}$, and $l_{2}=\sqrt{d\left\{\exp \left(\frac{2 a}{k_{n} d}\right)-1\right\}}$. Because of computational difficulties the function $v_{d}(x)$ will be approximated by $\exp \left\{-0.583 x\left(1+x^{2} / d\right)^{-1}\right\}$.

### 4.3 Tests based on Rao's statistic

In Gombay (2002) two sequential tests are proposed to test the hypotheses

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{0}: \theta=\theta_{0}, \eta \text { unknown, against } H_{A}: \theta \neq \theta_{0}, \eta \text { unknown } \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\theta \in \mathbb{R}^{d}, d \geq 1$, is the parameter of interest, and $\eta \in \mathbb{R}^{p}, p \geq 0$, is the nuisance parameter. It is assumed that the independent observations $Y_{1}, Y_{2}, \ldots$, come sequentially from a distribution with density function $f(y ; \theta, \eta)$. The efficient score vector is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{k}(\xi)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\xi} \log f\left(Y_{i}, \xi\right) \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where for brevity we denote $\xi=(\theta, \eta)$, and $\nabla_{\xi}$ denotes the vector of partial derivatives. Rao's statistic can be defined as

$$
R_{k}(\xi)=V_{k}(\xi) I^{-1}(\xi) V_{k}^{t}(\xi),
$$

where $\boldsymbol{I}(\xi)=-E_{\xi}\left(\partial^{2} / \partial \xi_{i} \partial \xi_{j} \log f(Y ; \xi)\right)$ is the $(d+p) \times(d+p)$ information matrix. As before we shall partition this matrix based on the partition of parameter vector $\xi=(\theta, \eta)$ as

$$
I=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
I_{11} & I_{12} \\
I_{21} & I_{22}
\end{array}\right)
$$

The inverse of $I$ will also be partitioned and denoted by

$$
I^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
I^{11} & I^{12} \\
I^{21} & I^{22}
\end{array}\right)
$$

To test the hypotheses defined in (4.7), the nuisance parameter will be replaced with its maximum likelihood estimator under $H_{0}$, that is, by the solution of the equation

$$
\sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{\eta} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \eta\right)=0
$$

Then the efficient score vector becomes

$$
V_{k}\left(\theta, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)=\frac{1}{\sqrt{k}} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \nabla_{0} \log f\left(Y_{i} ; \theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right),
$$

and Rao's statistics can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{k}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)=V_{k}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) I^{11}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) V_{k}^{t}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) . \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following theorem and its corollary gives the asymptotics under $H_{0}$ for Rao's statistics process. For simplicity we shall assume that the observations come from a normal distribution.

Theorem 4.1 (Gombay (2002)). Under $H_{0}$, there exist independent Wiener processes $W_{i}(t), i=1, \ldots, d$, such that for $\zeta \leq 1 / 2-1 /(2+\gamma)$
$\sup _{1 \leq t<\infty}\left|V_{[n t]}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{[n t \mid}\right) I^{11}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right) V_{[n t \mid}^{t}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{n t \mid}\right)-R^{(d)}(n t)\right|=O\left(n^{-\zeta} \sqrt{\log \log n}\right)$ a.s. where $R^{(d)}(t)=t^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{d} W_{i}^{2}(t)$ and $\gamma>0$.

Note that, when $\eta$ is replaced by $\hat{\eta}_{k}$ in $I^{11}\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)$ the asymptotic limit remains the same.

Corollary 4.1 (Gombay (2002)). Under conditions of Theorem 4.1

$$
\text { (i) } \begin{gathered}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} P\left\{\max _{1<k \leq n}\left[V_{k}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) I^{11}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) V_{k}^{t}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)\right]^{1 / 2} \leq \frac{t+b_{d}(\log n)}{a(\log n)}\right\} \\
=\exp \left(-e^{-t}\right) \text { a.s. }
\end{gathered}
$$

where $a(t)=(2 \log t)^{1 / 2}, b_{d}(t)=2 \log t+(d / 2) \log \log t-\log \Gamma(d / 2)$, and $\Gamma(t)=$ $\int_{0}^{\infty} y^{t-1} e^{-y} d y, \quad 1 \leq t<\infty$.
(ii) As $n \longrightarrow \infty$,

$$
\max _{1<k \leq n}\left[(k / n) V_{k}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) I^{11}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) V_{k}^{t}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)\right]^{1 / 2} \xrightarrow{D} \sup _{0 \leq I \leq 1}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{d} W_{i}^{2}(t)\right)^{1 / 2}
$$

Based on Corollary 4.1 the following truncated sequential tests are defined.
TEST 1. Stop and conclude that $H_{0}$ is not supported by the data at the first $k$ when

$$
T_{1}(k)=\sqrt{\frac{k}{n_{0}} R_{k}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)}>C_{1}(\alpha, d)
$$

Fail to reject $H_{0}$ if it is not rejected by $k=n_{0}$.
Here $n_{0}$ is the truncation point. In the next subsection we will show how to compute the critical values $C_{1}(\alpha, d)$ from the distribution of the maximum of the Bessel process.
TEST 2. Stop and conclude that $H_{0}$ is not supported by the data at the first $k$ when

$$
T_{2}(k)=\sqrt{R_{k}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)}>C_{2}\left(\alpha, d, n_{0}\right)
$$

Fail to reject, $H_{0}$ if it is not rejected by $k=n_{0}$.
Here the critical value is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{2}\left(\alpha, d, n_{0}\right)=\left(a\left(\log n_{0}\right)\right)^{-1}\left[-\log \left(-\frac{1}{2} \log (1-\alpha)\right)+b_{d}\left(\log n_{0}\right)\right] \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a(\cdot)$ and $b_{d}(\cdot)$ are defined in Corollary 4.1. A discussion about the critical values is given in the next subsection.

### 4.3.1 Critical values for Test 1

The critical values for Test 1 can be obtained from the distribution of the maximum of the Bessel process. Denote $\nu=d / 2-1$. According to Borodin and Salminen (1996) for $0 \leq x \leq y$ we have the following formulae

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{x}\left(\sup _{0 \leq s \leq l} R^{(d)}(s) \geq y\right)=1-\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{2 x^{-\nu} J_{\nu}\left(j_{\nu, k} x / y\right)}{y^{-\nu} j_{\nu, k} J_{\nu+1}\left(j_{\nu, k}\right)} \exp \left\{-\frac{j_{\nu, k}^{2} t}{2 y^{2}}\right\}, \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $J_{\nu}(x)$ is the Bessel function defined by

$$
J_{\nu}(x)=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{k}(x / 2)^{\nu+2 k}}{k!(\nu+k)!}
$$

and $0<j_{\nu, 1}<j_{\nu, 2}<\ldots$ are positive zeros of $J_{\nu}(\cdot)$. As our process starts at $x=0$, the critical value $C_{1}(\alpha, d)$ can be obtained by solving the following equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
1-\alpha=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{2 x^{-\nu} J_{\nu}\left(j_{\nu, k} x / C_{1}\right)}{C_{1}^{-\nu} j_{\nu, k} J_{\nu+1}\left(j_{\nu, k}\right)} \exp \left\{-\frac{j_{\nu, k}^{2}}{2 C_{1}^{2}}\right\} \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $x \rightarrow+0$.
When $x$ is very small, $x \rightarrow+0, J_{\nu}(x)$ is well approxinated by $x^{\prime \prime} /\left(2^{\prime \prime} \nu!\right)$. Using this property we can approximate $\left(x / C_{1}\right)^{-\nu} J_{\nu}\left(j_{\nu, k} x / C_{1}\right)$ by $j_{\nu, k}^{\nu} /\left(2^{\nu} \nu!\right)$. Replacing this in (4.12) we can obtain the critical value $C_{1}(\alpha, d)$ by solving

$$
\begin{equation*}
1-\alpha=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{j_{\nu, k}^{\nu-1}}{2^{\nu-1} J_{\nu+1}\left(j_{\nu, k}\right) \nu!} \exp \left\{-\frac{j_{\nu, k}^{2}}{2 C_{1}^{2}}\right\} \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

In Table 4.1 we give the critical values for various $\alpha$ and $d$. To olbtain these critical values in our computations we have used the first 100 terms in the sum on the right-hand side of equation (4.13). Note that the convergence of the series in (4.13) is not uniform in $\nu(d)$ and it is slower for larger values of $\nu(d)$. In this case more terms should be used in the sum. More extensive tables with the left-tail probability of the maximum of the Bessel process are given in Appendix B.

### 4.3.2 Critical values for Test 2

Using the critical values $C_{2}\left(\alpha, d, n_{0}\right)$ defined in (4.10) the test is too conservative. A better finite approximation to the critical values can be obtained by using a result of Vostrikova (1981). According to that result the critical value, $C_{2}^{\prime}\left(\alpha, d, n_{0}\right)$ can be obtained by solving

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha=\frac{\left(C_{2}^{\prime}\right)^{d} \exp \left\{-\left(C_{2}^{\prime}\right)^{2} / 2\right\}}{2^{d / 2} \Gamma(d / 2)}\left\{\log \left(n_{0}\right)\left[1-\frac{d}{\left(C_{2}^{\prime}\right)^{2}}+\frac{4}{\left(C_{2}^{\prime}\right)^{2}}\right]+O\left(\frac{1}{\left(C_{2}^{\prime}\right)^{4}}\right)\right\} \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following table gives the critical values $C_{2}^{\prime}\left(\alpha, d, n_{0}\right)$ needed later in our simulations studies.

Table 4.1: Critical value $C_{1}(\alpha, d)$ for different values of $d$ and different levels of significance $\alpha$.

|  | $\alpha$ |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $d$ | 0.10 | 0.05 | 0.01 |
| 2 | 2.419 | 2.695 | 3.242 |
| 3 | 2.751 | 3.023 | 3.562 |
| 4 | 3.023 | 3.294 | 3.827 |
| 5 | 3.260 | 3.530 | 4.059 |
| 6 | 3.474 | 3.743 | 4.269 |
| 7 | 3.669 | 3.938 | 4.461 |
| 8 | 3.851 | 4.119 | 4.640 |
| 10 | 4.183 | 4.450 | 4.968 |
| 12 | 4.482 | 4.748 | 5.264 |

Table 4.2: Critical value $C_{2}^{\prime}\left(\alpha, d, n_{0}\right)$ obtained using Vostrikova's formulae (4.14), for $\alpha=0.05$ and different values of $d$ and $n_{0}$ used in later simulations.

| $n_{0}$ |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $d$ | 50 | 100 | 200 | 500 |
| 2 | 3.490 | 3.540 | 3.585 | 3.633 |
| 3 | 3.830 | 3.880 | 3.920 | 3.970 |
| 4 | 4.105 | 4.155 | 4.200 | 4.249 |

### 4.4 Simulation Studies

In this section we shall study the test statistics in the cases when we compare three or four means. In each case we have carried out some Monte Carlo experiments to evaluate the empirical power and the average stopping time of the tests proposed. Each scenario in these Monte Carlo simulations is based on 5,000 replicates.

### 4.4.1 Comparison of three treatments

In this case we observe vectors $\mathrm{Y}_{\mathbf{k}}=\left(Y_{1 k}, Y_{2 k}, Y_{3 k}\right)^{t}, k \geq 1$, with independent normal components, i.e., for each $i=1,2,3, Y_{i k}$ iid $N\left(\mu_{i}, \sigma^{2}\right)$, for all $k \geq 1$. The log likelihood function based on the first $k$ observations is given by

$$
l_{k}=-\frac{3}{2} \log 2 \pi-\frac{3}{2} \log \sigma^{2}-\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{3} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i j}-\mu_{i}\right)^{2} .
$$

Using the parametrization

$$
\theta=\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}\right)=\left(\frac{\mu_{1}+\mu_{2}-2 \mu_{3}}{2 \sigma^{2} \sqrt{6}}, \frac{\mu_{1}-\mu_{2}}{2 \sigma^{2} \sqrt{2}}\right), \quad \eta=\left(\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}\right)=\left(\frac{\mu_{3}}{2 \sigma^{2}}, \frac{-1}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right),
$$

the hypothesis of interest becomes (4.7) with $\theta_{0}=(0,0), d=2$, and $p=2$.
Under $H_{0}$ the efficient score vector is

$$
V_{k}\left(0, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)=\left(\frac{1}{3 \sqrt{k}} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}+Y_{2 j}-2 Y_{3 j}\right), \frac{1}{\sqrt{k}} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}-Y_{2 j}\right)\right),
$$

and the information matrix is given by

$$
I\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
-\frac{1}{\eta_{2}} & 0 & -\frac{1}{\eta_{2}} & \frac{\eta_{1}}{\eta_{2}^{2}} \\
0 & -\frac{1}{\eta_{2}} & 0 & 0 \\
-\frac{1}{\eta_{2}} & 0 & -\frac{3}{2 \eta_{2}} & \frac{3 \eta_{1}}{2 \eta_{2}^{2}} \\
\frac{\eta_{1}}{\eta_{2}^{2}} & 0 & \frac{3 \eta_{1}}{2 \eta_{2}^{2}} & \frac{3 \eta_{2}-3 \eta_{1}^{2}}{2 \eta_{2}^{2}}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

The maximum likelihood estimator of $\sigma^{2}$ is

$$
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}=\frac{-1}{2 \hat{\eta}_{2 k}}=\frac{1}{3 k} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}^{2}+Y_{2 j}^{2}+Y_{3 j}^{2}\right)-\left[\frac{1}{3 k} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}+Y_{2 j}+Y_{3 j}\right)\right]^{2}
$$

Then, in terms of the initial parameters, Rao's statistic (4.9) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{k}=\left[\frac{\sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}+Y_{2 j}-2 Y_{3 j}\right)}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{6 k}}\right]^{2}+\left[\frac{\sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}-Y_{2 j}\right)}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{2 k}}\right]^{2} . \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

In our simulations the truncation point is $n_{0}=50$. For the sequential F-test we have used $c=3.38, a=6.68$, and $k_{0}=7$ as in Siegmund (1980).

Table 4.3: Comparison of three treatments. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) for Test 1, Test 2, and Sequential F-test with normally distributed outcomes for various $\delta$. Level of significance $\alpha=0.05$.

|  | POWER |  |  |  |  | AVST |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\delta$ | Test 1 | Test 2 | Seq F |  | Test 1 | Test 2 | Seq F |  |
| 0.0 | 0.039 | 0.011 | 0.042 |  | 49.67 | 49.74 | 48.54 |  |
| 0.1 | 0.076 | 0.020 | 0.077 |  | 49.35 | 49.57 | 48.29 |  |
| 0.2 | 0.191 | 0.063 | 0.193 |  | 48.22 | 48.81 | 47.44 |  |
| 0.3 | 0.411 | 0.174 | 0.40 .5 |  | 45.60 | 46.91 | 45.46 |  |
| 0.4 | 0.660 | 0.371 | 0.658 |  | 41.87 | 43.36 | 41.84 |  |
| 0.5 | 0.860 | 0.636 | 0.857 |  | 36.95 | 37.78 | 36.31 |  |
| 0.6 | 0.959 | 0.833 | 0.960 |  | 32.48 | 31.89 | 30.47 |  |
| 0.7 | 0.992 | 0.946 | 0.992 |  | 28.80 | 26.06 | 24.44 |  |
| 0.8 | 1.000 | 0.994 | 1.000 |  | 25.85 | 21.25 | 19.61 |  |

From Table 4.3 we see that Test 1 based on Rao's statistic and the sequential F -test are comparable in terms of power but the sequential F-test stops earlier for large values of $\delta$. Test 2 which is also based on Rao's statistic is comparable with the F -test in terms of average stopping time but it is less powerful. Note that the asymptotic distribution of these two tests is the same and the only difference is due to the different stopping rules.

### 4.4.2 Comparison of four treatments

In the case of four treatments the log likelihood function is given by

$$
l_{k}=-2 \log (2 \pi)-2 \log \left(\sigma^{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{2}} \sum_{i=1}^{4} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{i j}-\mu_{i}\right)^{2}
$$

Using the parametrization

$$
\begin{gathered}
\theta=\left(\theta_{1}, \theta_{2}, \theta_{3}\right)=\left(\frac{\mu_{1}-\mu_{2}}{2 \sigma^{2} \sqrt{2}}, \frac{\mu_{3}-\mu_{4}}{2 \sigma^{2} \sqrt{2}}, \frac{\left(\mu_{1}+\mu_{2}\right)-\left(\mu_{3}+\mu_{4}\right)}{4 \sigma^{2}}\right), \\
\eta=\left(\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}\right)=\left(\frac{\mu_{3}+\mu_{4}}{2 \sigma^{2} \sqrt{2}},-\frac{1}{2 \sigma^{2}}\right),
\end{gathered}
$$

the lypothesis of interest becomes (4.7) with $\theta_{0}=(0,0,0), d=3$, and $p=2$. Under $H_{0}$ the efficient score vector is

$$
V_{k}=\left(\frac{\sqrt{2}}{\sqrt{k}} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}-Y_{2 j}\right), \frac{\sqrt{2}}{\sqrt{k}} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{3 j}-Y_{4 j}\right), \frac{1}{\sqrt{k}} \sum_{j=1}^{k}\left[\left(Y_{1 j}+Y_{2 j}\right)-\left(Y_{3 j}+Y_{4 j}\right)\right]\right)
$$

and the information matrix is given by

$$
I\left(\theta_{0}, \eta\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
-\frac{2}{\eta_{2}} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -\frac{2}{\eta_{2}} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -\frac{4}{\eta_{2}} & -\frac{2 \sqrt{2}}{\eta_{2}} & \frac{2 \eta_{1} \sqrt{2}}{\eta_{2}^{2}} \\
0 & 0 & -\frac{2 \sqrt{2}}{\eta_{2}} & -\frac{4}{\eta_{2}} & \frac{4 \eta_{1}}{\eta_{2}} \\
0 & 0 & \frac{2 \eta_{1} \sqrt{2}}{\eta_{2}^{2}} & \frac{4 \eta_{1}}{\eta_{2}} & \frac{2 \eta_{2}-\eta_{2}^{2}}{\eta_{2}^{3}}
\end{array}\right) .
$$

The maximum likelihood estimator of $\sigma^{2}$ is

$$
\hat{\sigma}_{k}^{2}=\frac{-1}{2 \hat{\eta}_{2 k}}=\frac{1}{4 k} \sum_{i=1}^{4} \sum_{j=1}^{k} Y_{i j}^{2}-\left(\frac{1}{4 k} \sum_{i=1}^{4} \sum_{j=1}^{k} Y_{i j}\right)^{2}
$$

Then, in terms of the initial parameters, Rao's statistic (4.9) becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
R_{k}= & {\left[\frac{\sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}-Y_{2 j}\right)}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{2 k}}\right]^{2}+\left[\frac{\sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{3 j}-Y_{4 j}\right)}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{2 k}}\right]^{2} } \\
& +\left[\frac{\sum_{j=1}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}+Y_{2 j}-Y_{3 j}-Y_{4 j}\right)}{2 \hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{k}}\right]^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The results of our simulations are presented in Table 4.4. The truncation point is $n_{0}=50$ in the first part of the table and $n_{0}=100$ in the second part. The values of $c$ and $a$ for the sequential F-test are obtained by using (4.6). In order to obtain a level of significance of $\alpha=0.05$ we have used $k_{0}=7$. $c=3.65$ and $a=6.95$ when $n_{0}=50$, and $k_{0}=1.5, c=3.60$ and $a=6.75$ when $n_{0}=100$.

Siegmund (1980) reported a difference of $10-15 \%$ between the approximated significance level and the empirical value in the case of $d=3$ and $n_{0}=49$. From Table 4.4 we can see that the empirical value is larger then the
approximated value obtained by using (4.6). It seems that the difference becomes larger as $d$ and $n_{0}$ increase. In each part of Table 4.4 we have computed the values of $c$ and $a$ so that the empirical power of the $F$ test is 0.05 . We obtained $c^{\prime}=4.65$ and $a^{\prime}=7.15$ when $n_{0}=50$, and $c^{\prime \prime}=4.3$ and $a^{\prime \prime}=7.25$ when $n_{0}=100$. These values were obtained based on 10,000 replicates. The empirical power obtained by using these values is given in the brackets. As before Test 1 and the sequential $F$-test are comparable in terms of power. The sequential F-test stops earlier but the tests based on Rao's statistic have the advantage that the critical values can be easily computed.

Table 4.4: Comparison of four treatments. Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) for Test 1, Test 2 and Sequential F-test, with normally distributed outcomes for various $\delta$ and $n_{0}$. Level of significance $\alpha=0.05$.

|  |  | POWER |  |  |  |  | AVST |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n_{0}$ | $\delta$ | Test1 | Test 2 | Seq F |  | Test1 | Test2 | Seq F |  |
| 50 | 0.0 | 0.044 | 0.019 | $0.079(0.050)$ |  | 49.68 | 49.50 | $48.88(49.01)$ |  |
|  | 0.1 | 0.065 | 0.032 | $0.131(0.071)$ |  | 49.47 | 49.18 | $48.59(48.69)$ |  |
|  | 0.2 | 0.153 | 0.071 | $0.253(0.152)$ |  | 48.79 | 48.59 | $47.73(48.04)$ |  |
|  | 0.3 | 0.341 | 0.176 | $0.453(0.328)$ |  | 46.85 | 46.66 | $45.70(45.91)$ |  |
|  | 0.4 | 0.591 | 0.370 | $0.700(0.581)$ |  | 43.73 | 43.11 | $41.53(41.99)$ |  |
|  | 0.5 | 0.810 | 0.613 | $0.884(0.798)$ |  | 39.40 | 37.85 | $35.75(36.93)$ |  |
|  | 0.6 | 0.940 | 0.818 | $0.969(0.927)$ |  | 35.07 | 31.96 | $29.56(30.25)$ |  |
|  | 0.7 | 0.985 | 0.946 | $0.994(0.983)$ |  | 31.08 | 25.96 | $23.54(24.34)$ |  |
|  | 0.8 | 0.997 | 0.985 | $0.999(0.977)$ |  | 28.00 | 21.50 | $19.05(19.87)$ |  |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| 100 | 0.0 | 0.047 | 0.022 | $0.087(0.050)$ |  | 99.25 | 98.76 | $97.87(98.31)$ |  |
|  | 0.1 | 0.097 | 0.044 | $0.161(0.092)$ |  | 98.51 | 97.71 | $96.39(97.43)$ |  |
|  | 0.2 | 0.311 | 0.138 | $0.416(0.296)$ |  | 94.04 | 94.15 | $91.42(93.47)$ |  |
|  | 0.3 | 0.667 | 0.395 | $0.748(0.646)$ |  | 84.30 | 84.54 | $78.65(82.55)$ |  |
|  | 0.4 | 0.915 | 0.749 | $0.952(0.910)$ |  | 71.25 | 67.27 | $61.24(82.55)$ |  |
|  | 0.5 | 0.990 | 0.942 | $0.996(0.987)$ |  | 59.52 | 49.58 | $44.58(65.45)$ |  |
|  | 0.6 | 1.000 | 0.994 | $1.000(0.999)$ |  | 50.98 | 36.86 | $32.79(35.25)$ |  |
|  | 0.7 | 1.000 | 1.000 | $1.000(1.000)$ |  | 44.60 | 28.35 | $25.62(27.44)$ |  |
| 0.8 | 1.000 | 1.000 | $1.000(1.000)$ |  | 39.92 | 22.87 | $21.52(22.34)$ |  |  |

### 4.5 Sequential change-point ANOVA

We have seen in the previous section that we can find a re-parametrization so that the components of the efficient score vector are independent. This means that we can use the CUSUM test defined in the second chapter to compare two or more groups. The CUSUM test is more appropriate for an ANOVA change-point problem, that is, if we want to test if at an unknown time point $\tau>1$ one or more of the means have changed.

As before we shall assume that olservations are made sequentially on vectors $\mathbf{Y}_{\mathbf{k}}=\left(Y_{1 k}, Y_{2 k}, \ldots, Y_{d k}\right)^{t}, k \geq 1$, where $d$ denotes the number of groups (treatments), and $Y_{i k}$ is the $k^{\text {th }}$ observation from group (treatment) i. The observations are assumed to be independently and normally distributed with common variance, i.e., for each $i=1,2, \ldots, d$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{i k} \text { iid } N\left(\mu_{i k}, \sigma^{2}\right), \text { for all } k \geq 1 \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Considering $\sigma^{2}$ as a nuisance parameter, we are interested in testing

$$
H_{0}: \mu_{1 k}=\mu_{2 k}=\ldots=\mu_{d k}=\mu, \text { unknown, for all } k \geq 1,
$$

against the alternative

$$
H_{A}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\mu_{1 k}=\mu_{2 k}=\ldots=\mu_{d k}=\mu, \text { unknown, for all } k<\tau, \\
\text { there is an } i \in\{1,2, \ldots, d\} \text { such that } \mu_{i k} \neq \mu, \text { for } k \geq \tau,
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\tau$ is the unknown change point.
With the same re-parametrization and the same notations as in the previous section, for each $l \leq k$, we can define

$$
W_{k, l}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)=\Gamma^{-1 / 2}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right) V_{k, l}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right),
$$

where $\Gamma\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)=I_{11}-I_{12} I_{22}^{-1} I_{21}$ and $V_{k . l}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)$ is the score vector based on the last $k-l$ observations. The test is defined as in (2.14).

### 4.5.1 The case of three groups

When $d=3$, by using the results of Section 4.4.1, the components of the vector $W_{k, l}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)$ are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
& W_{k, l}^{(1)}=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{6}} \sum_{j=l}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}+Y_{2 j}-2 Y_{3 j}\right), \\
& W_{k, l}^{(2)}=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{2}} \sum_{j=l}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}-Y_{2 j}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

and the test is defined as follows.
Test 3 (CUSUM, $d=3$ ). Stop and reject. $H_{0}$ at the first $k \geq 2$ for which

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max \left\{\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{2 \leq l<k} W_{k, l}^{(1)}, \frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{2 \leq l<k} W_{k, l}^{(2)}\right\} \geq C\left(\alpha^{*}\right) . \tag{4.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

If no such $k \leq n_{0}$ exists then do not reject $H_{0}$.
Here the level of significance is $\alpha=1-\left(1-\alpha^{*}\right)^{2}$. For $\alpha=0.05$ we have $\alpha^{*}=0.0253$ and $C(0.0253)=2.48$. The empirical power and the average stopping time are presented in Table 4.5. The truncation point is $n_{0}=200$ and the change point is $\tau=100$. Before the change-point the observations come from the same distribution, i.e. $\mu_{1}=\mu_{2}=\mu_{3}=0$, and after the change point $\mu_{1}$ is changing to $\mu_{1}^{(-1)}$ taking on values $\{0.0,0.1,0.2,0.3,0.4,0.5,0.6,0.7$, $0.8,0.9,1.0\}$. The standard deviation was unchanged, $\sigma=1$. Each scenario is based on 5,000 replications.

Table 4.5: Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) for the CUSUM test with normally distributed outcomes. $\sigma^{2}=1, \mu_{2}=\mu_{3}=0$ and for various $\mu_{1}^{(-4)}$. Level of significance $\alpha=0.05$.

| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\mu_{1}^{(-1)}$ | Power | AVST |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 200 | 100 | 0.0 | 0.041 | 198.59 |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.099 | 196.90 |
|  |  | 0.2 | 0.216 | 194.02 |
|  |  | 0.3 | 0.410 | 188.31 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.64 .5 | 180.76 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.846 | 171.43 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.952 | 162.08 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.993 | 154.48 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 0.999 | 148.19 |
|  |  | 0.9 | 1.000 | 143.65 |
|  |  | 1.0 | 1.000 | 139.33 |

Table 4.6: Simulated power (Power) and average stopping time (AVST) for the CUSUM test with normally distributed outcomes. $\sigma^{2}=1, \mu_{2}=\mu_{3}=\mu_{4}=0$ and for various $\mu_{1}^{(A)}$. Level of significance $\alpha=0.05$.

| $n_{0}$ | $\tau$ | $\mu_{1}^{(.1)}$ | Power | AVST |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 200 | 100 | 0.0 | 0.037 | 198.75 |
|  |  | 0.1 | 0.087 | 197.39 |
|  |  | 0.2 | 0.180 | 195.24 |
|  |  | 0.3 | 0.364 | 190.25 |
|  |  | 0.4 | 0.602 | 183.14 |
|  |  | 0.5 | 0.820 | 174.14 |
|  |  | 0.6 | 0.946 | 164.86 |
|  |  | 0.7 | 0.990 | 157.00 |
|  |  | 0.8 | 0.998 | 150.55 |
|  |  | 1.0 | 1.000 | 145.27 |
|  |  |  |  |  |

### 4.5.2 The case of three groups

When $d=4$, by using the results of Section 4.4.2, the components of the vector $W_{k, l}\left(\theta_{0}, \hat{\eta}_{k}\right)$ are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
& W_{k, l}^{(1)}=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{2}} \sum_{j=l}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}-Y_{2 j}\right), \\
& W_{k, l}^{(2)}=\frac{1}{\hat{\sigma}_{k} \sqrt{2}} \sum_{j=l}^{k}\left(Y_{3 j}-Y_{4 j}\right), \\
& W_{k, l}^{(3)}=\frac{1}{2 \hat{\sigma}_{k}} \sum_{j=l}^{k}\left(Y_{1 j}+Y_{2 j}-Y_{3 j}-Y_{4 j}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

and the test is defined as follows.
Test 4 (CUSUM, $d=4$ ). Stop and reject $H_{0}$ at the first $k \geq 2$ for which

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max \left\{\frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{2 \leq l<k} W_{k, l}^{(1)}, \frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{2 \leq l<k} W_{k, l}^{(2)}, \frac{1}{\sqrt{n_{0}}} \max _{2 \leq l<k} W_{k, l}^{(3)}\right\} \geq C\left(\alpha^{*}\right) \tag{4.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

If no such $k \leq n_{0}$ exists then do not reject $H_{0}$.
Here the level of significance is $\alpha=1-\left(1-\alpha^{*}\right)^{3}$, and for $\alpha=0.05$ we have $\alpha^{*}=0.0169$ and $C(0.0169)=2.632$. The empirical power and the average stopping time are presented in Table 4.6. The truncation point is $n_{0}=200$ and the change point is $\tau=100$. Before the change-point the observations come from the same distribution, i.e., $\mu_{1}=\mu_{2}=\mu_{3}=\mu_{-1}=0$, and after the change point $\mu_{1}$ is changing to $\mu_{1}^{(A)}$ taking on values $\{0.0,0.1,0.2,0.3,0.4$, $0.5,0.6,0.7,0.8,0.9,1.0\}$. The standard deviation was unchanged, $\sigma=1$ and each scenario is based on 5,000 replications.

## Chapter 5

## Concluding Remarks

In this thesis the following results were obtained

- A truncated CUSUM-type sequential test was derived. The test is based on large sample approximations of the efficient score vector. It is applicable to a large class of distributions including distributions from the non-exponential family. The main attractive features of the new test are simple accommodation of nuisance parameters and easy computations of the asymptotic critical values. The test statistic was examined under the alternative hypothesis and its consistency was demonstrated. An application where the observations come from a non-exponential distribution was provided.
- The procedure described above was extended to the case of autocorrelated observations. The test statistics are provided in the case of monitoring the parameters of an $\mathrm{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ process. In the case of $\mathrm{AR}(1)$ and $\mathrm{AR}(2)$ models the consistency of the test was proved and the empirical power was evaluated in a simulation study. As the results of Lai (1995) are the only ones we found that perform test of change in the same generality as we do, we have compared our test to his algorithm. The
approximations developed in this part are strong enough to allow us to extend other testing procedures available for independent observations to the case of $\mathrm{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ models.
- Some testing procedures were proposed for comparison of three or more treatments. Tests based on Rao's statistics proposed by Gombay (2003) and to the secuential F-test proposed by Siegnund (1980) are compared in an extensive simulation study. The critical values for Test 2 of Gombay (2003) are computed.
- The CUSUM test is adapted to the ANOVA change-point problem. The empirical power and the average stopping time are computed.
- Strong approximations for sums of observations from an AR (p) model are proved in the last part of the thesis (Appendix A).

The results of this thesis can be extended in the following directions

- As the efticient score vector behaves approximately as a partial sums sequence, the idea of Siegmund (1985) can be used to develop new stopping rules that can improve the average stopping time of the test. An open ended procedure might be useful in some problems.
- Procedures to estimate the change-point and the new values of the parameters following the change-point detection are of intercst.
- The components of the efficient score vector might be used to develop new CUSUM and EWMA control charts. They might be implemented in the case of multiple change-point problems.
- The procedure can be extended to other time series models like MA or ARMA. An extension to the case of random coefficient autoregressive models (RCA) seems to work under certain moment conditions.
- In the case of comparison of three treatments when the objective is to find the best treatment, methods similar to those of Betensky (1996) and Siegmund (1993) can be based on the components of the efficient score vector. By using the simple structure of the efficient score vector the approximations of the critical values might be easier to obtain.


## Bibliography

Alwan, L.C. and H.V. Roberts (1988). Time Series Modeling for Statistical Process Control. J. Business Econ. Statist. (6), 87-95.

Armitage, P. (1960). Sequential Medical Trials. Blackwell.
Atenafu, E. and E. Gombay (2004). Sequential Tests for Change in the Parameters of Nested Random Effects Model. In: Asymptotic Methods in Statistics: A volume in Honor of Miklós Csöryö. Fields Institute Communications, 44, 301-314.

Bagshaw, M. and R.A. Johnson (1975). The Effect of Serial Correlation on the Performance of CUSUM Tests II. Technometrics (17), 73-80.

Bai, J. (1993). On the Partial Sums of Residuals in Autoregressive and Moving Average Models. Journal of Time Series Analysis (14), 247-260.

Bai, J. (1994a). Least Squares Estimation of a Shift in Linear Processes. Journal of Time Series Analysis (15), 453-472.

Bai, J. (1994b). Weak Convergence of Sequential Empirical Processes of Residuals in ARMA Models. Ann. Statist. (22), 2051-2061.

Bartlett, M.S. (1949). The Large Sample Theory of Sequential Tests. Proc. Camb. Phil. Soc. (42), 239-244.

Basseville, M. and I.V. Nikiforov (1993). Detection of Abrupt Changes: Theory and Applications. Prentice Hall. Englewood Cliffs.

Betensky, R.A. (1996). An O'Brien-Fleming Sequential Trial for Comparing Three Treatments. Annals of Statistics (24), 1765-1791.

Billingsley, P. (1968). Convergence of Probability Measures. Wiley. New York, New York.

Boldin, M.V. (1982). Estimation of the Distribution of Noise in Autoregressive Scheme. Theory Probab. Appl. (27), 866-871.

Borodin, A.N. and P. Salminen (1996). Handlook of Brownian Motion - Facts and Formulae. Birkhauser.

Breslow, N. (1969). On Large Sample Sequential Analysis with Applications to Survivorship Data. Journal of Applied Probability (6), 261-274.

Brockwell, P.J. and R.A. Davis (1991). Time Series: Theory and Methods. Springer-Verlag. New York, New York.

Brown, R.L., J. Durbin and J.M. Evans (1975). Techniques for Testing the Constancy of Regression Relationships Over Time (with discussions). J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B (37 ), 149-192.

Chernoff, H. and S. Zacks (1964). Estimating the Current Mean of A Normal Distribution which Is Subjected to Changes in Time . Ann. Math. Statist. (35), 999-1018.

Cox, D.R. (1963). Large Sample Sequential Tests for Composite Hypotheses. Sankhya (A25), 5-12.

Csörgő, M. and L. Horváth (1993). Weighted Approximations in Probability and Statistics. Wiley. Chichester.

Csörgö, M. and L. Horváth (1997). Limit Theorems in Change-Point Analysis. Wiley. New York, New York.

Csörgő, M. and P. Révész (1981). Strong Approximations in Probability and Statistics. Academic Press. New York, New York.

Davis, R.A., D. Huang and C. Yao (1995). Testing for a Cliange in the Parameter Values and Order of an Autoregressive Model. Ann. Statist. (23), 282304.

Eberlein, E. (1986). On Strong Invariance Principles under Dependence Assumptions. Ann. Probab. (14), 260-300.

Eimmahl, U. (1987). Strong Invariance Principles for Partial Sums of Independent Random Vectors. Ann. Probab. (15 ), 1419-1440.

Ghosh, B.K. (1970). Sequential Tests of Hypotheses. Addison-Wesley.
Gombay, E. (1994). Testing for Change-Points with Rank and Sign Statistics. Statistics \& Probability Letters (20), 49-55.

Gombay, E. (1996). The Weighted Sequential Likelihood Ratio. Canadian J. Statist. (24), 229-239.

Gombay, E. (1997). The Likelihood Ratio Under Noncontiguous Alternatives. Canadian J. Statist. (25 ), 417-423.

Gombay, E. (2000). Sequential Change-Detection with Likelihood Ratios. Statistics and Probability Letters (49), 195-204.

Gombay, E. (2002). Parametric Sequential Tests in the Presence of Nuisance Parameters. Theory Stoch. Processes (1-2), 107-118.

Gombay, E. (2003a). Sequential Change-Point Detection and Estimation. Sequential Analysis (22), 203-222.

Gombay, E. (2003b). Sequential Tests of Composite Hypotheses. In: Limit Theorems of Probability and Statistics II. I. Berkes, E. Csáki, M. Csörgö eds.. Budapest.

Gombay, E. and L. Horváth (1994). An Application of the Maximum Likelihood Test to the Change-Point Problem. Stochastic Process. Appl. (50), 161-171.

Gombay, E., G. Heo and A Hussein (2001). Nonparametric Sequential Comparison of Two Populations Using U-statistics. Preprint.

Horváth, L. (1993). Change in Autoregressive Processes. Stochastic Process. Appl. (44), 221-242.

Jiang, W., Tsui K.L. and W.H. Woodall (2000). A New SPC Monitoring Method: The ARMA Chart. Technometrics (42), 339-410.

Johnson, R.A. and M. Bagshaw (1975). The Effect of Serial Correlation on the Performance of CUSUM Tests. Technometrics (16), 103-112.

Komlós, J., Major P. and G. Tusnády (1975). An Approximation of Partial Sums of Independent R.V's and the Sample DF. I.Z. Wahrsch. verw. Gebiete (32), 111-131.

Konev, V. and S. Pergamenshchikov (1997). On Guaranteed Estimation of an Antoregressive Process. Ann. of Statistics (25), 2127-2163.

Kulperger, R.J. (1985). On the Residuals of Autoregressive and Polynomial Regression. Stochastic Processes and their Applications (21), 107-118.

Lai, T.L. (1995). Sequential Changepoint Detection in Quality Control and Dynamical Systems. J. R. Statist. Soc. B (57), 613-(658.

Lai, T.L. (2001). Sequential Analysis: Some Classical Problems and New Challenges. Statistica Sinica (11), 303-408.

Lee, S. and S. Park (2001). The CUSUM of Squares Test for Scale Changes in Infinite Order Moving Average Processes. Scand. J. Statist. (28), 625644.

Lehmann, E.L. (2001). Elements of Large Sample Theory. Springer-Verlag (28), 625-644.

Lerche, H.R. (1986). Boundary Crossing of Brownian Motion. Springer-Verlag.
Lorden, G. (1971). Procedures for Reacting to a Change in Distribution. Ann. Math. Statist. (42), 1879-1908.

Lurie, A.M. and N.K. Neerchal (1999). Bayes Type Tests for Constancy of Autoregressive Parameters. Environmetrics (10), 737-752.

Montgomery, D.C. and D.J. Friedman (1989). Statistical Process Control in a Computer-Integrated Manufacturing Enviromment. In: Statistical Process Control in Automated Manufacturing. Marcel Decker. New York. pp. 6788.

Moustakides, G.V. (1986). Optimal Stopping Times for Detecting Changes in Distributions. Ann. Statist. (14), 1379-1387.

Nyblom, J. (1989). Likelihood Ratio Methods for Monitoring Parameters of Nested Random Effects Model. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc. (84), 223-230.

O'Brien, P.C. and T.R. Fleming (1979). A Multiple Testing Procedure for Clinical Trials. Biometrics (35), 549-556.

Page, E.S. (1955). A Test for a Change in a Parameter Occurring at an Unknown Point. Biometrika (42), 523-527.

Phillips, P. and V. Solo (1992). Asymptotics for Linear Processes. The Ann. of Statistics (20), 971-1001.

Picard, D. (1985). A Test for a Change-point in Time Series. Adu. Appl. Probab. (17), 841-867.

Pocock, S.J. (1977). Group Sequential Methods in the Design and Analysis of Clinical Trials. Biometrika (64), 191-199.

Pollak, M. and D. Siegmund (1985). A Diffusion Process and its Applications to Detecting a Change in the Drift of a Brownian Motion. Biometrika (73), 267-280.

Robbins, H. and D. Siegmund (1972). Sequential Tests Involving Two Populations. J. Amer. Statist. Ass. (69), 132-139.

Serfling, R.J. (1980). Approximations Theorems of Mathematical Statistics. Wiley. New York.

Siegmund, D. (1980). Sequential and F Tests and the Related Confidence Intervals. Biometrika (67), 389-402.

Siegmund, D. (1985). Sequential Analysis: Tests and Confidence Intervals. Springer-Verlag. New York.

Siegmund, D. (1993). A Sequential Clinical Trial for Comparing Three Treatments. Annals of Statistics (21), 464-483.

Tang, S.M. and I.B. MacNeill (1993). The Effect of Serial Correlation on Tests for Parameter Change at Unknown Time. Ann. Statist. (21), 552--575.

Telksnys, L. (1986). Detection of Changes in Random Processes. Optimization Software.

Vostrikova, L.J. (1981). Detection of a "Disorder" in a Wiener Process. Theory Probab. Appl. (26), 356-362.

Wald, A. (1947). Sequential Analysis. Wiley. New York, New York.
Wald, A. and J. Wolfowitz (1948). Optimum Character of the Sequential Prob)ability Ratio Test. Ann. of Math. Statis. (19), 326-339.

Wetherill, G.B. (1977). Sampling Inspection and Quality Control. 2nd ed.. Chapman and Hall. London.

Yashchin, E. (1993). Performance of CUSUM Control Schemes for Serially Correlated Observations. Technometrics (35), 37-52.

Yashchin, E. (1995). Likelihood Ratio Methods for Monitoring Parameters of Nested Random Effects Model. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc. (90), 729-738.

Zhang, N.F. (1998). A Statistical Control Chart for Stationary Process Data. Technometrics (40), 24-38.

## Appendix A

## Strong Approximations for

## AR(p) Models

In this appendix we verify a strong invariance principle for the partial sums of an $\operatorname{AR}(\mathrm{p})$ time series model. Let $\left\{X_{k}\right\}_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ be a sequence of random variables. We denote

$$
S_{k}(m)=X_{m+1}+\ldots+X_{m+k} \text { for } m \geq 0 \text { and } k \geq 1
$$

Let $\|\cdot\|_{1}$ denote the $L_{1}$-norm. Our results will follow from a theorem of Eberlein (1986). As we are interested in real-valued random variables we shall state the theorem in a simpler version.

Theorem A. 1 (Eberlein). Let $\left\{X_{k}\right\}_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ be a sequence of real-valued random variables such that

1. $E X_{k}=0$ for all $k \in \mathbb{Z}$.
2. $\left\|E\left(S_{k}(m) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)\right\|_{1}=O\left(k^{\frac{1}{2}-\zeta}\right)$ uniformly in $m \geq 1$ for some $\zeta \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right)$, where $\mathcal{F}_{m}=\sigma\left(X_{l}: l \leq m\right)$.
3. There exists a constant $\sigma_{w}^{2}$, such that uniformly in $m \geq 1$,

$$
\frac{1}{k} E S_{k}^{2}(m)-\sigma_{w}^{2}=O\left(k^{-\lambda}\right)
$$

as $k \longrightarrow \infty$ for some $\lambda>0$.
4. There exists $\gamma>0$ such that uniformly in $m \geq 1$,

$$
\left\|E\left(S_{k}^{2}(m) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)-E S_{k}^{2}(m)\right\|_{1}=O\left(k^{1-\gamma}\right), \text { a.s. }
$$

as $k \longrightarrow \infty$.
5. There exists a constant $M<\infty$ and $r>2$, such that $E\left|X_{k}\right|^{r}<M$ for all $k \geq 1$.

Then, there exists a. Wiener process $\{W(t): t \geq 0\}$, such that

$$
\left|\sum_{k=1}^{[l]} X_{k}-\sigma_{w} W(t)\right|=O\left(t^{1 / \nu}\right) \text { a.s. }
$$

as $t \longrightarrow \infty$ for some $\nu>2$.
By verifying the assumptions made in the above theorem we get the following strong approximations for $A R(p)$ time series.

Lemma A. 1 Let $\left\{Y_{k}\right\}_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ be an $A R(p)$ process defined in (3.1) and assume that (3.2) and (3.3) hold. Then, there exists a Wiener process $\{W(t): t \geq 0\}$, such that

$$
\left|\sum_{k=1}^{[t]}\left(Y_{k}-\mu\right)-\sigma_{y} W(t)\right|=O\left(t^{1 / \nu}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

as $t \longrightarrow \infty$ for some $\sigma_{y}>0$ and some $\nu>2$.
Proof. Let $X_{k}=Y_{k}-\mu$, for all $k \in \mathbb{Z}$. It is enough to prove that the sequence $\left\{X_{k}\right\}$ satisfies the assumptions 1-5 of Eberlein's theorem. Since $\left\{X_{k}\right\}$ is stationary we can find a sequence of constants $\left(\alpha_{i}\right)_{i \geq 0}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
X_{l}=\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \varepsilon_{t-i} \tag{A.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and there are constants $M$ and $0<\alpha<1$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\alpha_{i}\right| \leq M a^{i} \text { for any } i \geq 0, \tag{A.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

conform Brockwell and Davis (1991, page 85).

1. It is easy to see that $E X_{k}=E\left(Y_{k}-\mu\right)=0$, for all $k$, and the first condition holds.
2. As $E\left(\varepsilon_{i}\right)=0$, for all $i$, by using relationship (A.1) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(S_{k}(m) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) & =\sum_{t=1}^{k} E\left(X_{m+t} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) \\
& =\sum_{t=1}^{k} \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t-i} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) \\
& =\sum_{t=1}^{k}\left\{\sum_{i=0}^{t-1} \alpha_{i} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t-i}\right)+\sum_{i \geq t} \alpha_{i} \varepsilon_{m+t-i}\right\} \\
& =\sum_{t=1}^{k} \sum_{i \geq t} \alpha_{i} \varepsilon_{m+t-i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now we can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|E\left(S_{k}(m) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)\right\|_{1} & =E\left|\sum_{t=1}^{k} \sum_{i \geq t} \alpha_{i} \varepsilon_{m+t-i}\right| \leq \sum_{t=1}^{k} \sum_{i \geq t}\left|\alpha_{i}\right| E\left|\varepsilon_{m+t-i}\right| \\
& \leq M E\left|\varepsilon_{0}\right| \sum_{t=1}^{k} \sum_{i \geq t} \alpha^{i} \leq \frac{\alpha M E\left|\varepsilon_{0}\right|}{1-\alpha} \sum_{t=1}^{k} \alpha^{t-1} \\
& \leq \frac{\alpha M E\left|\varepsilon_{0}\right|}{(1-\alpha)^{2}}\left(1-\alpha^{k}\right)=O(1), \text { as } k \longrightarrow \infty,
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies the second assumption of the theorem.
3. We can write

$$
S_{k}^{2}(m)=\sum_{t=1}^{k} X_{m+t}^{2}+2 \sum_{1 \leq 1<l \leq k} X_{m+t} X_{m+l}
$$

For each $t \geq 1$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
E X_{m+l}^{2} & =\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+l-i}^{2}\right)+2 \sum_{j>i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{j} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t-i} \varepsilon_{m+l-j}\right) \\
& =\sigma^{2}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

In the same way, for $t<l$, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(X_{m+l} X_{m+l}\right) & =\sum_{i . j \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{j} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+l-i} \varepsilon_{m+l-j}\right) \\
& =\sigma^{2} \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+(l-l)}
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, putting together the las three relationships we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
E S_{k}^{2}(m)=k \sigma^{2}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right)+2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{1 \leq 1<l \leq k} \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+(l-t)} \tag{A.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

This can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{k} E S_{k}^{2}(m) & =\sigma^{2}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right)+\frac{2 \sigma^{2}}{k} \sum_{1 \leq t<l \leq k} \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+(l-t)} \\
& =\sigma^{2}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right)+\frac{2 \sigma^{2}}{k}\left\{\sum_{t=1}^{k-1}\left(k \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+1}\right)-\sum_{t=1}^{k-1}\left(t \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+t}\right)\right\} \\
& =\sigma^{2}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right)+2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{i=1}^{k-1}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+1}\right)-\frac{2 \sigma^{2}}{k} \sum_{t=1}^{k-1}\left(t \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+1}\right) \\
& =\sigma^{2}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right)+A_{k}+B_{k} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By using (A.2), for any $n \geq 1$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|A_{k+n}-A_{k}\right| & =\left|2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{i=k}^{k+n-1}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+l}\right)\right| \leq 2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{t=k}^{k+n-1}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0}\left|\alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+\ell}\right|\right) \\
& \leq 2 \sigma^{2} M^{2} \sum_{t=k}^{k+n-1}\left(\alpha^{l} \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha^{2 i}\right)=\frac{2 \sigma^{2} M I^{2}}{1-\alpha^{2}} \alpha^{k} \sum_{t=0}^{n-1} \alpha^{l} \\
& =\frac{2 \sigma^{2} M^{2}}{\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)(1-\alpha)} \alpha^{k}\left(1-\alpha^{n}\right) \longrightarrow 0 \text { as } k \longrightarrow \infty,
\end{aligned}
$$

and by the Cauchy criterion the sequence $\left\{A_{k}\right\}$ is convergent. Let

$$
A=\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} A_{k}=2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{i \geq 1}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} a_{i+1}\right) .
$$

Then, as before we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|A-A_{k}\right| & =2 \sigma^{2}\left|\sum_{i \geq k}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+1}\right)\right| \leq 2 \sigma^{2} M^{2} \sum_{i \geq k} \alpha^{l}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha^{2 i}\right) \\
& =\frac{2 \sigma^{2} M L^{2}}{\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)(1-\alpha)} \alpha^{k}=O\left(k^{-1}\right) \text { as } k \longrightarrow \infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

By using the same techniques we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|B_{k}\right| & =\frac{2 \sigma^{2}}{k}\left|\sum_{t=1}^{k-1}\left(t \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+t}\right)\right| \leq \frac{2 \sigma^{2}}{k} \sum_{t=1}^{k-1}\left(t \sum_{i \geq 0}\left|\alpha_{i} \alpha_{i+t}\right|\right) \\
& \leq \frac{2 \sigma^{2} M M^{2}}{k} \sum_{t=1}^{k-1} t \alpha^{l}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha^{2 i}\right)=\frac{2 \sigma^{2} M M^{2}}{k\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)} \sum_{i=1}^{k-1} t \alpha^{t} \\
& =\frac{2 \alpha \sigma^{2} M^{2}}{k\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)(1-\alpha)^{2}}=O\left(k^{-1}\right) \text { as } k \longrightarrow \infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now using the last two relationships we obtain

$$
\frac{1}{k} E S_{k}^{2}(m)-\sigma^{2}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}\right)^{2}=\left(A_{k}-A\right)+B_{k}=O\left(k^{-1}\right)
$$

and the third assumption of Eberlein's theorem follows.
4. Observe that

$$
S_{k}(m)=\sum_{t=1}^{k} X_{m+t}=\sum_{t=1}^{k}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \varepsilon_{m+l-i}\right)=\sum_{j \geq 0} \gamma_{j} \varepsilon_{m+k-j}
$$

where $\gamma_{j}=\gamma_{j}(k)$ are defined by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\gamma_{j}=\alpha_{0}+\alpha_{1}+\ldots+\alpha_{j}, \text { for } j=0,1, \ldots, k-1,  \tag{A.4}\\
\gamma_{j}=\alpha_{j}+\alpha_{j-1}+\ldots+\alpha_{j-(k-1)}, \text { for } j \geq k
\end{array}\right.
$$

Note that for each $j \geq k$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\gamma_{j}\right|=\left|\sum_{i=j-k+1}^{j} \alpha_{i}\right| \leq M \sum_{i=j-k+1}^{j} \alpha^{i}=M a^{j-k+1} \sum_{i=0}^{k-1} \alpha^{i}=\frac{M\left(1-\alpha^{k}\right)}{(1-\alpha)} \alpha^{j-k+1} . \tag{A.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we can write

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{k}^{2}(m)=\sum_{j \geq 0} \gamma_{j}^{2} \varepsilon_{m+k-j}^{2}+2 \sum_{j \geq 0} \sum_{i>j} \gamma_{i} \gamma_{j} \varepsilon_{m+k-i} \varepsilon_{m+k-j} \tag{A.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

By using (A.6) we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
E S_{k}^{2}(m)=\sigma^{2}\left(\sum_{j \geq 0} \gamma_{j}^{2}\right) \tag{A.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(S_{k}^{2}(m) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)=\sigma^{2}\left(\sum_{j=0}^{k-1} \gamma_{j}^{2}\right)+\sum_{j \geq k} \gamma_{j}^{2} \varepsilon_{m+k-j}^{2}+2 \sum_{j \geq k} \sum_{i>j} \gamma_{i} \gamma_{j} \varepsilon_{m+k-i} \varepsilon_{m+k-j} \tag{A.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now collecting (A.7) and (A.8)

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(S_{k}^{2}(m) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)-E S_{k}^{2}(m) & =\sum_{j \geq k} \gamma_{j}^{2}\left(\varepsilon_{m+k-j}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right)+2 \sum_{j \geq k} \sum_{i>j} \gamma_{i} \gamma_{j} \varepsilon_{m+k-i} \varepsilon_{m+k-j} \\
& =D_{k}(m)
\end{aligned}
$$

We call write

$$
E\left|D_{k}(m)\right| \leq E\left|\varepsilon_{0}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right| \sum_{j \geq k} \gamma_{j}^{2}+2 E\left|\varepsilon_{0} \varepsilon_{1}\right| \sum_{j \geq k} \sum_{i>j}\left|\gamma_{i} \gamma_{j}\right|=A_{k}+B_{k}
$$

Now we shall prove that each term on the right-hand side of the above inequality is of order $O(1)$ as $k \longrightarrow \infty$. Consider the first term. By (A.5) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
A_{k} & =E\left|\varepsilon_{0}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right| \sum_{j \geq k} \gamma_{j}^{2} \leq \frac{M^{2} \alpha^{2} E\left|\varepsilon_{0}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right|}{(1-\alpha)^{2}}\left(1-\alpha^{k}\right)^{2} \sum_{j \geq k} \alpha^{2(j-k)} \\
& =\frac{M^{2} \alpha^{2} E\left|\varepsilon_{0}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right|}{(1-\alpha)^{2}\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)}\left(1-\alpha^{k}\right)^{2}=O(1) \text { as } k \longrightarrow \infty
\end{aligned}
$$

In the same way

$$
\begin{aligned}
B_{k} & =2 E\left|\varepsilon_{0} \varepsilon_{1}\right| \sum_{j \geq k} \sum_{i>j}\left|\gamma_{i} \gamma_{j}\right| \leq \frac{M^{2} \alpha^{2} E\left|\varepsilon_{0} \varepsilon_{3}\right|}{(1-\alpha)^{2}}\left(1-\alpha^{k}\right)^{2} \sum_{j \geq k} \sum_{i>j} \alpha^{i+j-2 k+2} \\
& \leq \frac{M \Gamma^{2} \alpha^{3} E\left|\varepsilon_{0} \varepsilon_{1}\right|}{(1-\alpha)^{2}}\left(1-\alpha^{k}\right)^{2} \sum_{j \geq k} \alpha^{2(j-k)}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha^{i}\right) \\
& =\frac{M \Gamma^{2} \alpha^{3} E\left|\varepsilon_{0} \varepsilon_{1}\right|}{(1-\alpha)^{3}}\left(1-\alpha^{k}\right)^{2} \sum_{j \geq k} \alpha^{2(j-k)} \\
& =\frac{M^{2} \alpha^{3} E\left|\varepsilon_{0} \varepsilon_{1}\right|}{(1-\alpha)^{3}\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)}\left(1-\alpha^{k}\right)^{2}=O(1) \text { as } k \rightarrow \infty,
\end{aligned}
$$

and the fourth assumption is satisfied. As the last assumption is trivial to check the lemma is proved.

Lemma A. 2 Let $\left\{Y_{k}\right\}_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}$ be an $A R(p)$ process defined in (3.1) and assume that (3.2) and (3.3) hold. Then, for any $s \in\{1,2, \ldots, p\}$ there exists a Wiener process $\{W(t): t \geq 0\}$, such that

$$
\left|\sum_{k=1}^{[f]} \varepsilon_{k}\left(Y_{k-s}-\mu\right)-\sigma_{s} W(t)\right|=O\left(t^{1 / u}\right) \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

as $t \longrightarrow \infty$ for some $\sigma_{s}>0$ and some $\nu>2$.

Proof. Let $s \in\{1,2, \ldots, p\}$ fixed and denote $X_{k}=\varepsilon_{k}\left(Y_{k-s}-\mu\right)$. Now we shall prove that the sequence $\left\{X_{k}\right\}$ satisfies assumptions 1-5 of Eleerlein's theorem.

1. It is easy to see that $E X_{k}=E\left(\varepsilon_{k}\left(Y_{k-s}-\mu\right)\right)=E\left(\varepsilon_{k}\right) E\left(Y_{k-s}-\mu\right)=0$, for all $k$, and the first condition holds.
2. As $E\left(\varepsilon_{i}\right)=0$, for all $i$, by using relationship (A.1) for $\left(Y_{k-s}-\mu\right)$ we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(S_{k}(m) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) & =\sum_{t=1}^{k} E\left(X_{m+t} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)=\sum_{t=1}^{k} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t}\left(Y_{m+t-s}-\mu\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) \\
& =\sum_{t=1}^{k} \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-i} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\sum_{i=0}^{t-s-1} \alpha_{i} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-i}\right)+\sum_{i \geq t-s} \alpha_{i} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-i} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t}\right)\right\} \\
& =0
\end{aligned}
$$

and the second assumption is verified.
3. For each $t \geq 1$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
E X_{m+t}^{2} & =E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t}^{2}\left(Y_{m+l-s}-\mu\right)^{2}\right)=E\left(\varepsilon_{m+1}^{2}\right) E\left(Y_{m+t-s}-\mu\right)^{2} \\
& =\sigma^{2} \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t-s-i}^{2}\right)+2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{j>i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{j} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t-s-i} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-j}\right) \\
& =\sigma^{4}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

In the same way, for $0<t<l$, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(X_{m+l} X_{m+l}\right) & =E\left[\varepsilon_{m+l} \varepsilon_{m+l}\left(Y_{m+l-s}-\mu\right)\left(Y_{m+l-s}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& =E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t}\right) E\left(\varepsilon_{m+l}\right) E\left[\left(Y_{m+l-s}-\mu\right)\left(Y_{m+l-s}-\mu\right)\right] \\
& =0
\end{aligned}
$$

Now using the last two relationships we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
E S_{k}^{2}(m) & =\sum_{t=1}^{k} E X_{m+t}^{2}+2 \sum_{1 \leq 1<1 \leq k} E\left(X_{m+t} X_{m+l}\right) \\
& =k \cdot \sigma^{4}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right) \tag{A.9}
\end{align*}
$$

and the third assumption follows.
4. For each $t \geq 1$ we can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(X_{m+t}^{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)= & E\left(\varepsilon_{m+t}^{2}\left(Y_{m+t-s}-\mu\right)^{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) \\
= & \sum_{i=0}^{t-s-1} \alpha_{i}^{2} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+l}^{2} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-i}^{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)+\sum_{i \geq t-s} \alpha_{i}^{2} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+1}^{2} \varepsilon_{m+1-s-i}^{2} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) \\
& +2 \sum_{j>i \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{j} E\left(\varepsilon_{m+1}^{2} \varepsilon_{m+l-s-i} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-j} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) \\
= & \sigma^{4}\left(\sum_{i=0}^{t-s-1} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right)+\sigma^{2} \sum_{i \geq t-s} \alpha_{i}^{2} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-i}^{2} \\
& +2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{j>i \geq l-s} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{j} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-i} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-j}
\end{aligned}
$$

In a similar way, for $t<l$, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(X_{m+t} X_{m+l} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right) & =E\left[\varepsilon_{m+t} \varepsilon_{m+l}\left(Y_{m+l-s}-\mu\right)\left(Y_{m+l-s}-\mu\right) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right] \\
& =\sum_{i, j \geq 0} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{j}\left[E\left(\varepsilon_{m+l} \varepsilon_{m+l} \varepsilon_{m+l-s-i} \varepsilon_{m+l-s-j} \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)\right] \\
& =0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, putting together the last two relationships we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(S_{k:}^{2}(m) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)= & \sigma^{4} \sum_{t=1}^{k}\left(\sum_{i=0}^{t-s-1} \alpha_{i}^{2}\right)+\sigma^{2} \sum_{t=1}^{k}\left(\sum_{i \geq 1-s} \alpha_{i}^{2} \varepsilon_{m+i-s-i}^{2}\right) \\
& +2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{t=1}^{k}\left(\sum_{j>i \geq t-s} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{j} \varepsilon_{m+l-s-i} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-j}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

From the above relation and (A.9) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left(S_{k}^{2}(m) \mid \mathcal{F}_{m}\right)-E S_{k}^{2}(m) & =\sigma^{2} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\sum_{i \geq t-s} \alpha_{i}^{2}\left(\varepsilon_{m+t-s-i}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right)\right\} \\
& +2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{t=1}^{k}\left\{\sum_{j>i \geq t-s} \alpha_{i} \alpha_{j} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-i} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-j}\right\} \\
& =A_{k}(m)+B_{k}(m) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Consider the first term

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left|A_{k}(m)\right| & =\sigma^{2} E\left|\sum_{t=1}^{k}\left\{\sum_{i \geq t-s} \alpha_{i}^{2}\left(\varepsilon_{m+t-s-i}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right)\right\}\right| \\
& \leq \sigma^{2} \sum_{t=1}^{k}\left\{\sum_{i \geq t-s} \alpha_{i}^{2} E\left|\varepsilon_{m+t-s-i}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right|\right\} \\
& \leq \sigma^{2} M^{2} E\left|\varepsilon_{0}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right| \sum_{t=1}^{k}\left(\sum_{i \geq t-s} \alpha^{2 i}\right) \\
& \leq \sigma^{2} M M^{2} E\left|\varepsilon_{0}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right| \sum_{t=1}^{k}\left(\alpha^{2(t-s)} \sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha^{2 i}\right) \\
& =\frac{\sigma^{2} M I^{2} E\left|\varepsilon_{0}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right| \alpha^{2(1-s)}}{\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)} \sum_{t=1}^{k} \alpha^{2(t-1)} \\
& =\frac{\sigma^{2} M^{2} E\left|\varepsilon_{0}^{2}-\sigma^{2}\right| \alpha^{2(1-s)}}{\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)^{2}}\left(1-\alpha^{2 k}\right)=O(1), \text { as } k \longrightarrow \infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

Consider now the second term

$$
\begin{aligned}
E\left|B_{k}(m)\right| & =2 \sigma^{2} E\left|\sum_{t=1}^{k}\left\{\sum_{i \geq t-s} \alpha_{i} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-i}\left(\sum_{j>i} \alpha_{j} \varepsilon_{m+t-s-j}\right)\right\}\right| \\
& \leq 2 \sigma^{2} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\sum_{i \geq t-s}\left|\alpha_{i}\right| E\left|\varepsilon_{m+t-s-i}\right|\left(\sum_{j>i}\left|\alpha_{j}\right| E\left|\varepsilon_{m+t-s-j}\right|\right)\right\} \\
& \leq 2 \sigma^{2} M^{2}\left(E\left|\varepsilon_{0}\right|\right)^{2} \sum_{i=1}^{k}\left\{\sum_{i \geq i-s} \alpha^{i}\left(\sum_{j>i} \alpha^{j}\right)\right\} \\
& =\frac{2 \sigma^{2} \alpha M M^{2}\left(E\left|\varepsilon_{0}\right|\right)^{2}}{(1-\alpha)} \sum_{t=1}^{k}\left(\sum_{i \geq t-s} \alpha^{2 i}\right) \\
& =\frac{2 \sigma^{2} \alpha M M^{2}\left(E\left|\varepsilon_{0}\right|\right)^{2}}{(1-\alpha)} \sum_{t=1}^{k} \alpha^{2(t-s)}\left(\sum_{i \geq 0} \alpha^{2 i}\right) \\
& =\frac{2 \sigma^{2} \alpha M M^{2}\left(E\left|\varepsilon_{0}\right|\right)^{2}}{(1-\alpha)\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \alpha^{2(t-s)} \\
& =\frac{2 \sigma^{2} \alpha M M^{2}\left(E\left|\varepsilon_{0}\right|\right)^{2} \alpha^{2(1-s)}}{(1-\alpha)\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)} \sum_{i=0}^{k-1} \alpha^{2 t} \\
& =\frac{2 \sigma^{2} \alpha M^{2}\left(E\left|\varepsilon_{0}\right|\right)^{2} \alpha^{2(1-s)}}{(1-\alpha)\left(1-\alpha^{2}\right)}\left(1-\alpha^{2 k}\right)=O(1), \text { as } k \longrightarrow \infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

From the last two relationships we obtain $\left\|A_{k}(m)+B_{k}(m)\right\|_{1}=O(1)$ and the fourth assumption is verified. As $\varepsilon_{i}$ are normally distributed and the process is stationary the last assumption follows and the lemma is proved.

## Appendix B

## The Distribution of the

## Maximum of the Bessel Process

In this appendix we give more extensive tables of the distribution of the maximum of the Bessel process of different orders $d$. Each table presents the probability

$$
P\left(\sup _{0 \leq \leq \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)
$$

where $R^{(d)}(t)$ is defined as

$$
R^{(d)}(t)=\sqrt{W_{1}^{2}(t)+\ldots+W_{d}^{2}(t)}
$$

and $W_{i}(t), i=1, \ldots, d$, are independent standard Brownian processes.

Table B.1: Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=2$.

| z | Second decimal place of $z$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | . 00 | . 01 | . 02 | . 03 | . 04 | . 05 | . 06 | . 07 | . 08 | . 09 |
| 1.5 | . 44190 | . 44937 | . 45680 | . 46.421 | . 47158 | 47891 | . 48620 | . 49346 | . 50067 | . 50784 |
| 1.6 | . 51496 | . 52205 | . 52908 | . 53607 | . 54300 | . 24989 | . 555673 | . 56351 | . 57024 | . 57692 |
| 1.7 | . 58354 | . 59011 | . 59662 | . 60307 | . 60947 | . 61580 | . 62208 | . 62883 | . 63446 | . 64055 |
| 1.8 | . 64659 | . 65256 | . 65847 | . 66432 | . 67010 | . 67582 | . 68148 | . 68708 | . 69261 | . 69808 |
| 1.9 | . 70348 | . 70882 | . 71409 | . 71930 | . 72445 | . 72953 | . 73455 | . 73950 | . 74439 | . 74921 |
| 2.0 | . 75397 | . 75867 | 76330 | . 76787 | . 77238 | .77682 | 78120 | .78552 | . 78977 | . 79396 |
| 2.1 | . 79809 | . 80216 | . 80617 | . 81012 | . 81401 | .81783 | . 82160 | . 82531 | . 28896 | . 83255 |
| 2.2 | . 83608 | . 83956 | . 84298 | . 84634 | . 84965 | .85290 | . 85610 | . 85924 | . 86233 | . 86536 |
| 2.3 | . 86834 | . 87127 | . 87415 | . 87698 | . 87975 | . 88248 | . 88515 | . 88778 | . 89036 | . 89289 |
| 2.4 | . 89537 | . 89780 | . 90019 | . 90254 | . 904184 | . 90709 | . 909330 | . 91147 | . 91359 | . 91568 |
| 2.5 | .91.772 | . 91972 | . 92168 | . 92359 | . 92548 | . 92732 | . 92912 | . 93089 | . 93261 | . 934431 |
| 2.6 | . 93596 | . 93759 | . 93917 | . 94072 | . 94294 | . 94373 | . 94518 | . 944660 | . 94799 | . 94935 |
| 2.7 | . 95068 | . 95198 | . 953325 | . 95449 | . 95570 | . 95689 | . 95804 | . 95917 | . 96028 | . 96135 |
| 2.8 | . 96241 | . 96343 | . 96444 | . 96542 | . 96637 | . 96730 | . 96821 | . 96910 | . 96997 | . 97081 |
| 2.9 | . 97164 | . 97244 | . 97323 | . 97399 | . 97473 | . 97546 | . 97617 | . 97686 | . 97753 | . 97818 |
| 3.0 | . 97882 | . 97944 | . 98005 | . 98064 | . 98121 | . 98177 | . 98231. | . 98284 | . 98336 | . 98386 |
| 3.1 | . 98435 | . 98482 | . 98528 | . 98573 | . 98617 | . 98659 | . 98701 | . 98741 | . 98780 | . 98818 |
| 3.2 | . 98855 | . 98891 | . 98926 | . 98959 | . 98992 | . 99024 | . 99055 | . 99085 | . 99115 | . 99143 |
| 3.3 | . 99171 | . 99198 | . 99224 | . 99249 | . 99273 | . 99297 | . 99320 | . 99342 | . 99364 | . 99385 |
| 3.4 | . 99406 | . 99425 | . 99445 | . 99463 | . 99481 | . 99499 | . 99516 | . 99532 | . 99548 | . 99563 |
| 3.5 | . 99578 | . 99593 | . 99607 | . 99620 | . 99633 | . 99646 | . 99658 | . 99670 | . 99682 | . 99693 |
| 3.6 | . 99704 | . 99714 | . 99724 | . 99734 | . 99744 | . 99753 | . 99762 | . 99770 | . 99778 | . 99786 |
| 3.7 | . 99794 | . 99802 | . 99809 | . 99816 | . 99822 | . 99829 | . 99835 | . 99841 | . 99847 | . 998.53 |
| 3.8 | . 99858 | . 998864 | . 99869 | . 99874 | . 99878 | . 99883 | . 99887 | . 99892 | . 99896 | . 99900 |
| 3.9 | . 99903 | . 99907 | . 99911 | . 99914 | . 99917 | . 99921 | . 99924 | . 99927 | . 99930 | . 99932 |
| 4.0 | . 999935 | . 99937 | . 99940 | . 99942 | . 99945 | . 99947 | . 99949 | . 99951 | . 99953 | . 99955 |
| 4.1 | . 99957 | . 99958 | . 99960 | . 99996 | . 99963 | . 99965 | . 99966 | . 999968 | . 99969 | . 99970 |
| 4.2 | . 99971 | . 99973 | . 999974 | . 99975 | . 99976 | . 99977 | . 99978 | . 99979 | . 99980 | . 99980 |
| 4.3 | . 99981 | . 99982 | . 99983 | . 99984 | . 99984 | . 99985 | . 99986 | . 99986 | . 99987 | . 99987 |
| 4.4 | . 99988 | . 99988 | . 99988 | . 99989 | . 99990 | . 99990 | . 99991 | . 99991 | . 99992 | . 99992 |
| 4.5 | . 99992 | . 99993 | . 99999 | . 99993 | . 99994 | . 99994 | .99994 | . 99994 | . 999995 | . 99995 |
| 4.6 | . 999995 | . 99995 | . 99999 | . 999996 | . 999996 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99997 |
| 4.7 | . 999997 | . 999997 | . 99997 | . 999997 | . 999998 | . 99998 | . 99999 | . 99998 | . 999988 | . 999998 |
| 4.8 | . 999998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 |
| 5.0 | . 999999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 |

Table B.2: Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq 1 \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=3$.

| z | Second decimal place of $z$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | . 00 | . 01 | . 02 | . 03 | . 04 | . 05 | . 06 | . 07 | . 08 | . 09 |
| 1.9 | . 50133 | . 50816 | . 51497 | . 52173 | . 52847 | . 53517 | . 54183 | . 54845 | . 55504 | . 56158 |
| 2.0 | . 56808 | . 57454 | . 58095 | . 58732 | . 59364 | . 59991 | . 60614 | . 61232 | . 61844 | . 62452 |
| 2.1 | . 63055 | .63652 | . 64244 | . 64831 | . 65412 | . 65988 | . 665558 | . 67123 | . 67682 | . 682336 |
| 2.2 | . 68783 | . 69325 | . 69862 | . 70392 | . 70917 | . 71435 | . 71948 | . 72455 | . 72956 | . 73451 |
| 2.3 | . 73940 | .74423 | . 74900 | .75372 | . 75837 | . 76296 | . 76749 | . 77196 | . 77638 | . 78073 |
| 2.4 | . 78502 | . 78926 | . 79343 | . 79755 | . 80161 | . 80561 | .80955 | . 81343 | . 81725 | . 82102 |
| 2.5 | . 82473 | . 82838 | . 83198 | . 83552 | .83900 | . 84243 | .84580) | . 84912 | .85238 | . 85559 |
| 2.6 | . 85875 | . 86185 | . 86490 | . 86790 | . 87085 | . 8737.4 | . 87059 | . 87938 | .88213 | . 88482 |
| 2.7 | . 88747 | . 89007 | . 89262 | . 89512 | . 89757 | . 89998 | . 90235 | . 00467 | . 90694 | . 90917 |
| 2.8 | . 91136 | . 91350 | . 91561 | . 91767 | . 91969 | . 92166 | . 92360 | . 92550 | . 92736 | . 92918 |
| 2.9 | . 93096 | . 93271 | . 93442 | . 93609 | . 93773 | . 93933 | . 94090 | . 94243 | . 94393 | . 94540 |
| 3.0 | . 94683 | . 94823 | . 94961 | . 95095 | . 95226 | . 953354 | . 95479 | . 95601 | . 95720 | . 95837 |
| 3.1 | . 95951 | . 96062 | . 96170 | . 96276 | . 96380 | . 96481 | . 96579 | . 96675 | . 96769 | . 96861 |
| 3.2 | . 96950 | . 97037 | . 97122 | . 97204 | . 97285 | . 97364 | . 97440 | . 97515 | . 97588 | . 97659 |
| 3.3 | . 97728 | . 97795 | . 97860 | . 97924 | . 97986 | . 98047 | . 98106 | . 98163 | . 98219 | . 98273 |
| 3.4 | . 98326 | . 98377 | . 98427 | . 98476 | . 98523 | . 98569 | . 98613 | . 98657 | . 98699 | . 98740 |
| 3.5 | . 98780 | . 98818 | . 98850 | . 98893 | . 98928 | . 989063 | . 98996 | . 99028 | . 99060 | . 99091 |
| 3.6 | . 99120 | . 99149 | . 99177 | . 99204 | . 99231 | . 99256 | . 99281 | . 99305 | . 993328 | . 993351 |
| 3.7 | . 99373 | . 99394 | . 99415 | . 99435 | . 99454 | . 99473 | . 99491 | . 99508 | . 99525 | . 99542 |
| 3.8 | . 99558 | . 99573 | . 99588 | . 99603 | . 99617 | . 99630 | . 90943 | . 99656 | . 99668 | . 99680 |
| 3.9 | . 99692 | . 99703 | . 99713 | . 99724 | . 99734 | . 99744 | . 99753 | . 99762 | . 99771 | . 99779 |
| 4.0 | . 99787 | . 99795 | . 99803 | . 99810 | . 99817 | . 99824 | . 99831 | . 99837 | . 99843 | . 99849 |
| 4.1 | . 99855 | . 99861 | . 99866 | . 99871 | . 99876 | . 99881 | . 99886 | . 99890 | . 99894 | . 99898 |
| 4.2 | . 99902 | . 99906 | . 99910 | . 99914 | . 99917 | . 99920 | . 99924 | . 99927 | . 999930 | . 99932 |
| 4.3 | . 99935 | . 999938 | . 99940 | . 99943 | . 99945 | . 99948 | . 99950 | . 99952 | . 99954 | . 99956 |
| 4.4 | . 99958 | . 99959 | . 99961 | . 99963 | . 99964 | . 99966 | . 99967 | . 99969 | . 999970 | . 99971 |
| 4.5 | . 99973 | . 99974 | . 99975 | . 09976 | . 99977 | . 99978 | . 99979 | . 99980 | . 99981 | . 99982 |
| 4.6 | . 99988 | . 99984 | . 99984 | . 99985 | . 99986 | . 99987 | . 99987 | . 99988 | . 99988 | . 99989 |
| 4.7 | . 99990 | . 99990 | . 99991 | . 99991 | . 99992 | . 99992 | . 99992 | . 99993 | . 99993 | . 99994 |
| 4.8 | . 99994 | . 99994 | . 99995 | . 99995 | . 99995 | . 99995 | . 99999 | . 99996 | . 99999 | . 99997 |
| 4.9 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 |
| 5.0 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 |

Table B.3: Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=4$.

| z | Second decimal place of z |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | . 00 | . 01 | . 02 | . 03 | . 04 | . 05 | . 06 | . 07 | . 08 | . 09 |
| 2.0 | . 38912 | . 39596 | . 40280 | . 40964 | . 41648 | . 42331 | . 43014 | . 43697 | . 44378 | . 45059 |
| 2.1 | . 45738 | . 46416 | . 47092 | . 47767 | . 48439 | . 49110 | . 49778 | . 50444 | . 51108 | . 51769 |
| 2.2 | . 52427 | . 53082 | . 53735 | . 54384 | . 55029 | . 55672 | . 56310 | . 56945 | . 57576 | . 58204 |
| 2.3 | . 58827 | . 59446 | . 60061 | . 60672 | . 61278 | . 61880 | . 62477 | . 63070 | . 63657 | . 64240 |
| 2.4 | . 64818 | . 65391 | . 65959 | . 66522 | . 67080 | . 67632 | . 68179 | . 68721 | . 692958 | . 69789 |
| 2.5 | .70314 | . 70835 | . 71349 | . 71858 | . 72361 | . 72859 | . 73351 | . 73838 | . 74318 | . 74793 |
| 2.6 | . 75263 | . 75726 | . 76184 | . 76636 | . 77082 | . 77523 | . 77957 | . 78386 | 78809 | . 79227 |
| 2.7 | . 79639 | . 80045 | . 80445 | . 80840 | . 81229 | . 81612 | . 81989 | . 82361 | . 82728 | . 83089 |
| 2.8 | . 83.444 | .83794 | . 84138 | . 84477 | . 84811 | . 85139 | . 85462 | . 85779 | . 86091 | . 86398 |
| 2.9 | . 86700 | . 86997 | . 87288 | . 87575 | . 87856 | . 88133 | . 88404 | . 88671 | . 88933 | . 89190 |
| 3.0 | .89443 | . 89691 | .89934 | . 90172 | . 90406 | . 90636 | . 90861 | . 91082 | . 91299 | . 91511 |
| 3.1 | . 91719 | . 91923 | . 92123 | . 92318 | . 92510 | . 92698 | .92882 | . $93066^{2}$ | . 93239 | . 93411 |
| 3.2 | . 93580 | . 93746 | . 93908 | . 94066 | . 94221 | . 94372 | . 94521 | . 914666 | . 94807 | . 94946 |
| 3.3 | . 95081 | . 95213 | . 95343 | . 95469 | . 95592 | . 95713 | . 95831 | . 95946 | . 96058 | . 96168 |
| 3.4 | . 96275 | . 96379 | . 96481 | . 96580 | . 966677 | . 96772 | . 96864 | . 96954 | . 97042 | . 97127 |
| 3.5 | . 97211 | . 97292 | . 97371 | . 97448 | . 97524 | . 97597 | . 97668 | . 97738 | .97805 | 97871 |
| 3.6 | . 97935 | . 97998 | . 980.59 | . 98118 | . 98175 | . 98231 | . 98286 | . 98339 | . 98390 | . 98440 |
| 3.7 | . 98489 | . 98536 | . 98583 | . 986627 | . 98671 | . 98713 | . 98754 | . 98794 | . 98833 | . 98870 |
| 3.8 | . 98907 | . 98942 | . 98977 | . 99010 | .99043 | .99074 | . 99105 | . 99134 | . 99163 | . 99191 |
| 3.9 | . 99218 | . 99244 | . 99270 | . 99294 | . 99318 | .99341 | .99364 | . 993885 | . 99406 | . 9942 T |
| 4.0 | . 99447 | . 99466 | . 99484 | . 99502 | . 99520 | . 99537 | . 99553 | . 99569 | . 99584 | . 99599 |
| 4.1 | . 996613 | . 996627 | . 996640 | . 999653 | . 99665 | . 99678 | . 99689 | . 99701 | . 99711 | . 99722 |
| 4.2 | . 99732 | . 99742 | . 99752 | . 99761 | . 99770 | . 99778 | . 99786 | . 99794 | . 99802 | . 99810 |
| 4.3 | . 99817 | . 99824 | . 998830 | . 99837 | . 99843 | . 99849 | . 99855 | . 99860 | . 99866 | . 99871 |
| 4.4 | . 99876 | . 99881 | . 99886 | . 99890 | . 99894 | . 99898 | . 99902 | . 99906 | . 99910 | . 99914 |
| 4.5 | . 99917 | . 99920 | . 99924 | . 99927 | . 999930 | . 99932 | . 99935 | . 99938 | . 99940 | . 99943 |
| 4.6 | . 99945 | . 99947 | . 99950 | . 99952 | . 99954 | . 99956 | . 99957 | . 99959 | . 99961 | . 99963 |
| 4.7 | . 99964 | . 99966 | . 99997 | . 99969 | . 99970 | . 99971 | . 99972 | . 99974 | . 99975 | . 99976 |
| 4.8 | . 99977 | . 999978 | . 99979 | . 99980 | . 99981 | . 99982 | . 99982 | . 999983 | . 999984 | . 99985 |
| 4.9 | . 99985 | . 999986 | . 999987 | . 99987 | . 99988 | . 99988 | . 99989 | . 999889 | . 999990 | . 99990 |
| 5.0 | . 999991 | . 99991 | . 99992 | . 99992 | . 99992 | . 99993 | . 99993 | . 99993 | . 99994 | . 999994 |
| 5.1 | . 99994 | . 99995 | . 99995 | . 99995 | . 99995 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 999996 | . 99996 |
| 5.2 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 999997 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99998 | . 999998 | . 99998 |
| 5.3 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 |
| 5.5 | . 99999 | . 999999 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 |

Table B.4: Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=5$.

| \% | Second decimal place of $z$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | . 00 | . 01 | . 02 | . 03 | . 04 | . 05 | . 06 | . 07 | . 08 | . 09 |
| 2.4 | . 50291 | . 50943 | . 51592 | . 52239 | . 52884 | . 53526 | . 54165 | . 54801 | . 55435 | . 56065 |
| 2.5 | . 56691 | . 57315 | . 57935 | . 58551 | . 59164 | . 59772 | . 60377 | . 60978 | .61574 | . 62167 |
| 2.6 | . 62755 | .63338 | . 63918 | . 64492 | . 65062 | . 65627 | . 66188 | . 66743 | . 67294 | . 67839 |
| 2.7 | . 68380 | . 68915 | . 69446 | . 69971 | . 70491 | . 71005 | . 71514 | . 72018 | . 72517 | . 73009 |
| 2.8 | . 73497 | . 73979 | . 74455 | . 74926 | . 75392 | . 75851 | . 76306 | . 76754 | . 77197 | . 77635 |
| 2.9 | . 78060 | . 78492 | . 78913 | . 79328 | . 79737 | . 80141 | . 80539 | . 80931 | . $\$ 1318$ | . 81699 |
| 3.0 | . 82075 | . 82445 | . 82810 | . 83169 | . 83523 | .83872 | 84215 | . 84552 | .84884 | . 85211 |
| 3.1 | . 855533 | . 85849 | . 86161 | . 86467 | . 86768 | . 87064 | . 87354 | . 87640 | . 87921 | . 88197 |
| 3.2 | . 88468 | . 88734 | . 88995 | .89252 | . 89504 | . 89751 | . 89994 | . 90232 | . 90465 | . 90695 |
| 3.3 | . 90919 | . 91140 | . 91356 | . 91568 | . 91775 | . 91979 | . 92178 | . 92374 | . 92505 | . 92753 |
| 3.4 | . 92937 | . 93116 | . 93292 | . 93465 | . 93633 | . 93799 | . 93960 | . 94118 | . 94273 | . 91424 |
| 3.5 | . 94572 | . 94716 | . 94858 | . 94996 | . 95131 | . 95263 | . 95392 | . 95518 | . 95641 | .95761 |
| 3.6 | . 95878 | . 95993 | . 96105 | . 96214 | . 96320 | . 964124 | . 96526 | . 96605 | . 96721 | .96816 |
| 3.7 | . 96907 | . 96997 | . 97084 | . 97169 | . 97252 | . 97333 | . 97412 | . 97489 | . 97563 | . 976336 |
| 3.8 | . 97707 | . 97776 | . 97843 | .97909 | . 97972 | . 98034 | .98095 | . 98153 | . 98210 | . 98266 |
| 3.9 | . 98320 | . 98372 | . 98423 | . 98473 | . 98521 | . 98508 | . 98614 | . 98658 | . 98701 | . 98743 |
| 4.0 | . 98783 | . 98823 | . 98861 | . 98898 | . 38934 | . 98969 | . 99003 | . 990336 | . 990088 | . 990099 |
| 4.1 | . 99129 | . 99158 | . 99187 | . 9921.4 | . 99241 | . 99267 | . 99292 | . 993316 | . 999339 | . 993362 |
| 4.2 | . 99384 | . 99405 | . 99426 | . 99446 | . 99465 | . 99484 | . 99502 | . 99520 | . 99537 | . 99553 |
| 4.3 | . 99569 | . 99585 | . 99600 | . 99614 | . 99628 | . 99642 | . 99655 | . 99667 | . 99679 | . 99691 |
| 4.4 | .9970:3 | . 99714 | . 99724 | . 99734 | . 99744 | . 99754 | . 99763 | . 99772 | . 99781 | . 99789 |
| 4.5 | . 99797 | . 99805 | . 99812 | . 99819 | . 99826 | . 99833 | . 99839 | . 99846 | . 99852 | . 99857 |
| 4.6 | . 99868 | . 99868 | . 99874 | . 99879 | . 99883 | . 99888 | . 99893 | . 99897 | . 99901 | . 99905 |
| 4.7 | . 99909 | . 99913 | . 99916 | . 99920 | . 999923 | . 99926 | . 99929 | . 99932 | . 999935 | . 99938 |
| 4.8 | . 99940 | . 99943 | . 99945 | . 99947 | . 99950 | . 99952 | . 99954 | . 99956 | . 99958 | . 99959 |
| 4.9 | . 99961 | . 99963 | . 99965 | . 99966 | . 99968 | . 99969 | . 999970 | . 99972 | . 999973 | . 90974 |
| 5.0 | . 99975 | . 99976 | . 99978 | . 99979 | . 99980 | . 99980 | . 99981 | . 999982 | . 99983 | . 99984 |
| 5.1 | . 99985 | . 99985 | . 99986 | . 99987 | . 99987 | . 99988 | . 99989 | . 99989 | . 99999 | . 999990 |
| 5.2 | . 99991 | . 99991 | . 99992 | . 99992 | . 99992 | . 99993 | . 99993 | . 99994 | . 99994 | . 99994 |
| 5.3 | . 99995 | . 99995 | . 999995 | . 99995 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 999996 | . 99997 | . 99997 |
| 5.4 | . 99997 | . 999997 | . 999997 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99999 |
| 5.5 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 999999 | 1.0000 |

Table B.5: Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=6$.

| z | Second decimal place of z |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | . 00 | . 01 | . 02 | . 03 | . 04 | . 05 | . 06 | . 07 | . 08 | . 09 |
| 2.5 | . 43174 | . 43829 | . 44483 | . 45136 | . 45789 | . 46441 | . 47092 | . 47742 | . 48391 | . 49039 |
| 2.6 | . 49685 | . 50329 | . 50971 | . 51612 | . 52250 | . 52880 | . 53520 | . 54151 | . 54780 | . 55406 |
| 2.7 | . 56029 | . 56648 | . 57265 | . 57879 | . 58489 | . 59095 | . 59698 | . 60298 | . 60893 | . 61485 |
| 2.8 | . 62072 | . 62656 | . 63235 | . 63810 | . 64381 | . 64947 | . 65509 | . 66066 | . 66619 | . 67167 |
| 2.9 | . 67710 | . 68248 | . 68781 | . 69309 | . 69833 | . 70351 | . 70864 | . 71372 | . 71875 | . 72372 |
| 3.0 | . 72864 | . 73351 | . 73833 | . 74309 | . 74779 | . 75245 | . 75705 | . 76159 | . 76608 | .77051 |
| 3.1 | . 77489 | . 77921 | . 78348 | . 78769 | . 79185 | . 79595 | . 80000 | . 80399 | . 80793 | . 81181 |
| 3.2 | . 81504 | . 81941 | .82313 | . 82679 | . 83040 | .83390 | .83746 | . 84090 | . 84430 | . 84764 |
| 3.3 | . 85093 | . 85416 | . 85735 | . 86048 | . 86356 | . 866659 | . 86957 | . 87249 | . 87537 | . 87820 |
| 3.4 | . 88098 | .88371 | . 88639 | .8890:3 | . 89161 | . 89415 | . 89665 | . 89909 | . 90149 | . 90385 |
| 3.5 | . 900616 | . 90843 | . 91065 | . 91283 | . 91497 | . 91707 | . 91912 | . 92114 | . 92311 | . 92504 |
| 3.6 | . 92693 | . 92879 | . 93060 | . 93238 | . 93412 | . 935883 | . 93749 | . 93913 | . 94072 | . 91228 |
| 3.7 | . 94381 | . 94530 | . 94676 | . 94819 | . 94959 | . 95095 | . 95228 | . 95359 | . 95486 | . 95610 |
| 3.8 | . 95732 | . 95850 | . 95966 | . 96079 | . 96189 | . 96297 | . 96402 | . 96505 | . 96604 | . 96702 |
| 3.9 | . 96797 | . 96890 | . 96980 | . 97068 | . 97154 | . 97238 | . 97320 | . 97399 | . 97477 | . 97552 |
| 4.0 | . 97626 | . 97697 | . 97767 | . 97835 | . 97901 | . 97965 | . 98027 | . 98088 | . 98147 | . 98205 |
| 4.1 | . 98261 | . 98315 | . 98368 | . 98420 | . 98470 | . 98518 | . 98566 | . 98612 | . 98656 | . 98699 |
| 4.2 | . 98741 | . 98782 | . 98822 | . 98860 | . 98898 | . 98934 | . 98969 | . 99004 | . 990037 | . 99069 |
| 4.3 | . 99100 | . 99130 | . 99160 | . 99188 | . 99216 | .99242 | . 99268 | . 99293 | . 993318 | . 993341 |
| 4.4 | . 99364 | . 99386 | . 99408 | . 99428 | . 99448 | . 99468 | . 99487 | . 99505 | . 99522 | . 99539 |
| 4.5 | . 99556 | . 99572 | . 99587 | . 99602 | . 99617 | . 996330 | . 99644 | . 99665 | . 996670 | . 99688 |
| 4.6 | . 99693 | . 99705 | . 99716 | . 99726 | . 99737 | . 99746 | . 99756 | . 99765 | . 99774 | . 99783 |
| 4.7 | . 99791 | . 99799 | . 99807 | . 99814 | . 99821 | . 99828 | . 99835 | . 99841 | . 99847 | . 99853 |
| 4.8 | . 99859 | . 99865 | . 99870 | . 99875 | . 99880 | . 99885 | . 99889 | . 99894 | . 99898 | . 99902 |
| 4.9 | . 99906 | . 99910 | . 99914 | . 99917 | . 99920 | . 99924 | . 99927 | . 99930 | . 999933 | . 99936 |
| 5.0 | . 99938 | . 99941 | . 99943 | . 99946 | . 99948 | . 99950 | . 99952 | . 99954 | . 99955 | . 99958 |
| 5.1 | . 99960 | . 99962 | . 99963 | . 99965 | . 99966 | . 99968 | . 99969 | . 99971 | . 99972 | . 999973 |
| 5.2 | . 99974 | . 99975 | . 99976 | . 99978 | . 99979 | . 99979 | .99980 | . 99981 | . 99982 | . 99988 |
| 5.3 | . 99984 | . 99984 | . 99985 | . 99986 | . 99998 | . 99987 | . 99988 | . 99988 | . 99989 | . 99989 |
| 5.4 | . 99990 | . 99990 | . 999991 | . 99991 | . 999992 | . 99992 | . 99992 | . 999993 | . 99993 | . 99994 |
| 5.5 | . 99994 | . 99994 | . 99994 | . 99995 | . 99995 | . 999995 | . 99995 | . 999996 | . 999996 | . 99996 |
| 5.6 | . 99996 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 999997 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 |
| 5.7 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 |
| 5.8 | . 99999 | . 999999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 999999 | . 999999 | .99999 | . 99999 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 |

Table B.6: Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=7$.

| 2 | Second decimal place of $z$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | . 00 | . 01 | . 02 | . 03 | . 04 | . 05 | . 06 | . 07 | . 08 | . 09 |
| 2.8 | . 50184 | . 50820 | . 51454 | . 52086 | . 52716 | . 53344 | . 53970 | . 54593 | . 55213 | . 55832 |
| 2.9 | . 56447 | . 57059 | . 57668 | . 58274 | . 58877 | . 59477 | . 60073 | . 60665 | . 61254 | . 61839 |
| 3.0 | . 62420 | . 62997 | . 635570 | . 64139 | .6170:3 | . 65203 | . 65819 | . 66371 | . 66918 | . 67460 |
| 3.1 | . 67997 | . 68530 | . 69058 | . 69581 | . 70100 | . 70613 | .71121 | . 71624 | . 72122 | . 72615 |
| 3.2 | . 73103 | . 73585 | . 74063 | . 74535 | .75001 | . 75462 | . 75918 | . 76369 | . 76814 | . 77254 |
| 3.3 | . 77688 | . 78117 | . 78.540 | . 78958 | . 79371 | . 79778 | . 80179 | . 80575 | . 80966 | . 81351 |
| 3.4 | . 81731 | . 82106 | . 82475 | . 82838 | . 83197 | .83549 | . 83897 | . 84239 | . 84576 | . 84908 |
| 3.5 | . 55235 | . 85556 | . 85872 | . 86183 | . 86489 | . 86790 | . 87085 | . 87376 | . 87662 | . 87943 |
| 3.6 | . 88219 | . 88490 | . 88756 | . 89018 | . 89275 | . 89527 | . 89775 | . 90018 | . 90256 | . 90490 |
| 3.7 | . 90720 | . 90945 | . 91166 | . 91382 | . 91595 | . 91803 | . 92007 | . 92207 | . 92402 | . 92594 |
| 3.8 | . 92782 | . 92966 | . 93147 | .93323 | . 93496 | . 93665 | .938:30 | . 93992 | . 94151 | . 94306 |
| 3.9 | . 94457 | . 94605 | . 94750 | . 94892 | . 95030 | . 95165 | . 95298 | . 95427 | . 95553 | . 95676 |
| 4.0 | . 95796 | . 95914 | . 96029 | . 96141 | . 96250 | . 96356 | . 96460 | . 96562 | . 96661 | . 96758 |
| 4.1 | . 96852 | . 96943 | . 97033 | . 97120 | . 97205 | . 97288 | . 97369 | . 97447 | . 97524 | . 97599 |
| 4.2 | . 97671 | . 97742 | . 97811 | . 97878 | . 97943 | . 98006 | . 98068 | . 98128 | . 98187 | . 98243 |
| 4.3 | . 98299 | . 98352 | . 98404 | . 98455 | . 98505 | . 98552 | . 98599 | . 98644 | . 98688 | . 98731 |
| 4.4 | . 98772 | . 98812 | . 98851 | . 98889 | . 98926 | . 98962 | . 98996 | . 99030 | . 99066 | . 99094 |
| 4.5 | . 99125 | . 99154 | . 99183 | . 99211 | . 99238 | . 99264 | . 99290 | . 99314 | . 993338 | .99361 |
| 4.6 | . 99384 | . 99405 | . 99426 | . 99447 | . 99466 | . 99485 | . 99504 | . 99521 | . 99539 | . 99555 |
| 4.7 | . 99571 | . 99587 | . 99602 | . 99616 | . 99631 | . 99644 | . 99657 | . 99670 | . 99682 | . 99694 |
| 4.8 | . 99705 | . 99717 | . 99727 | . 99738 | . 99747 | . 99757 | . 99766 | . 99775 | . 99784 | . 99792 |
| 4.9 | . 99800 | . 99808 | . 99815 | . 99823 | . 99830 | .99836 | . 99843 | . 99849 | . 99855 | . 99861 |
| 5.0 | . 99866 | . 99872 | . 99877 | . 99882 | . 99886 | . 99891 | . 99895 | . 99900 | .99904 | . 99908 |
| 5.1 | . 99912 | . 9991.5 | . 99919 | . 99922 | . 99925 | . 99928 | . 999931 | . 99934 | .99937 | . 99940 |
| 5.2 | . 99942 | . 99945 | . 99947 | . 99949 | . 99952 | . 99954 | . 99956 | . 99995 | . 99959 | . 99961 |
| 5.3 | . 999663 | . 999965 | . 99996 | . 99968 | . 99969 | . 99971 | . 99972 | . 99973 | . 99974 | . 99976 |
| 5.4 | . 99974 | . 99978 | . 99979 | . 99980 | . 99981 | . 99982 | . 99982 | . 99983 | . 99984 | . 99985 |
| 5.5 | . 99986 | . 99986 | . 99987 | . 99988 | . 99988 | . 99989 | . 99989 | . 99990 | . 99990 | . 99991 |
| 5.6 | . 99991 | . 99992 | . 99992 | . 99993 | . 99993 | . 999993 | . 99994 | . 99994 | . 99994 | . 99995 |
| 5.7 | . 99995 | . 99995 | . 99996 | . 99990 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 99997 |
| 5.8 | . 999997 | . 99997 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99999 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99999 |
| 6.0 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 |

Table B.7: Maximum of the Bessel process probability in left-hand tail, $P\left(\sup _{0 \leq t \leq 1} R^{(d)}(t)<z\right)$, for $d=8$.

| z | Second decimal place of $z$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | . 00 | . 01. | . 02 | . 03 | . 04 | . 05 | . 06 | . 07 | . 08 | . 09 |
| 3.0 | . 51514 | . 52140 | . 52765 | . 53387 | . 54008 | . 54626 | . 55242 | . 55885 | . 56465 | . 57073 |
| 3.1 | . 57678 | . 58280 | . 58879 | . 59474 | . 60066 | . 60655 | . 61240 | . 61822 | . 62399 | . 62973 |
| 3.2 | . 63543 | . 64109 | . 64671 | . 65229 | . 65782 | . 663331 | . 66876 | . 67416 | . 67951 | . 68482 |
| 3.3 | . 69009 | . 69530 | . 70047 | . 70559 | . 71065 | . 71567 | . 72064 | . 72556 | .73043 | . 73525 |
| 3.4 | . 74001 | . 74472 | . 74938 | . 75399 | . 75855 | . 76305 | . 76750 | . 77189 | . 77623 | . 78052 |
| 3.5 | . 78476 | . 78894 | . 79306 | . 79714 | . 80115 | . 80512 | . 80903 | . 81289 | . 81669 | . 82044 |
| 3.6 | .82413 | . 82778 | . 83136 | .83490 | .83838 | . 84181 | . 84519 | .84852 | . 85179 | . 85501 |
| 3.7 | . 85818 | . 86130 | . 86437 | . 86738 | . 87035 | . 87327 | . 87614 | . 87895 | . 88172 | .8844\% |
| 3.8 | . 88712 | . 88974 | . 89232 | . 89486 | . 89734 | . 89978 | . 90218 | .90453 | . 906883 | .90909 |
| 3.9 | . 91131 | . 91349 | . 91562 | . 91771 | . 91976 | . 92177 | . 92374 | . 92566 | . 92755 | . 92940 |
| 4.0 | . 93121 | . 93299 | . 93472 | . 93642 | . 93808 | . 93971 | . 94130 | . 94286 | .94438 | . 94587 |
| 4.1 | . 94733 | . 94875 | . 95014 | . 95150 | . 95283 | . 95413 | . 95540 | . 95664 | . 95785 | . 95903 |
| 4.2 | . 96018 | . 96131 | . 96240 | . 96348 | . 96452 | . 96554 | . 96654 | . 96751 | . 96845 | . 96938 |
| 4.3 | . 97028 | . 97115 | . 97201 | . 97284 | . 97365 | . 97444 | . 97521 | . 97596 | . 97669 | . 97740 |
| 4.4 | . 97809 | . 97876 | . 97942 | . 98005 | . 98067 | . 98128 | . 98186 | . 98243 | . 98299 | . 988353 |
| 4.5 | . 98405 | . 98456 | . 98505 | . 98553 | . 98600 | . 98645 | . 98690 | . 98732 | . 98774 | . 98814 |
| 4.6 | . 98853 | . 98891 | . 98928 | . 98964 | . 98999 | . 99032 | . 99065 | . 99090 | . 99127 | . 99157 |
| 4.7 | . 99186 | . 99214 | . 99241 | . 99267 | . 99292 | . 99317 | . 99341 | . 999364 | . 993886 | . 99408 |
| 4.8 | . 99429 | . 99449 | . 99469 | . 99488 | . 99506 | . 99524 | . 99541 | . 99558 | . 99574 | . 995859 |
| 4.9 | .99604 | . 99619 | . 996633 | . 99046 | . 99660 | . 9966 | . 99684 | . 99696 | . 99708 | . 99719 |
| 5.0 | . 99729 | . 99740 | . 99749 | . 99759 | . 99768 | . 9977 | . 99786 | . 99794 | . 99802 | . 99810 |
| 5.1 | . 99817 | . 99824 | . 99831 | . 99838 | . 99844 | . 99850 | . 99850 | . 99862 | . 998867 | . 998873 |
| 5.2 | . 99878 | . 99883 | . 99888 | . 99892 | . 99896 | . 99901 | . 99905 | . 99990 | . 99912 | . 99916 |
| 5.3 | . 99920 | . 99923 | . 99926 | . 99929 | . 99932 | . 99935 | . 99938 | . 99940 | . 99943 | . 99945 |
| 5.4 | . 99948 | . 99950 | . 99952 | . 99954 | . 99956 | . 99958 | . 99960 | . 99962 | . 99963 | . 99965 |
| 5.5 | . 99966 | . 99968 | . 99969 | . 99971 | . 99972 | . 99973 | . 999974 | . 99976 | . 99977 | . 99978 |
| 5.6 | . 99979 | . 99980 | . 99981 | . 99982 | . 99982 | . 99983 | . 99984 | . 99985 | . 99985 | . 99986 |
| 5.7 | . 99987 | . 99987 | . 99988 | . 99989 | . 99989 | . 99990 | . 99990 | . 99991 | . 999991 | . 99992 |
| 5.8 | . 99992 | . 99992 | . 99993 | . 99993 | . 99993 | . 99994 | . 999994 | . 99994 | . 999995 | . 999995 |
| 5.9 | . 99995 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 99996 | . 99997 | . 99997 | . 999997 | . 99997 |
| 6.0 | . 999997 | . 99997 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 | . 99998 |
| 6.1 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 999999 | . 99999 | . 999999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 999999 | . 99999 |
| 6.2 | . 99999 | . 99999 | . 99999 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 | 1.0000 |

